



# THE ROCK OF AGES

EDWARD HENRY BICKERSTETH

**Source:**  
Original 1860 Edition  
archive.org

**Cover:**  
Half Dome from Glacier Point  
Yosemite National Park, California  
Images by John 'K' (flickr.com)



**Fonts:**  
Liberation Sans Narrow  
Linux Biolinum  
Linux Libertine



April 2024  
practicaprophetica.com  
srac.info

THE ROCK OF AGES;  
OR  
SCRIPTURE TESTIMONY  
TO THE ONE ETERNAL GODHEAD  
OF  
THE FATHER, AND OF THE SON,  
AND OF THE HOLY GHOST

BY

EDWARD HENRY BICKERSTETH, M.A.  
INCUMBENT OF CHRIST CHURCH, HAMPSTEAD

“Comparing spiritual things with spiritual.”  
*1 Corinthians 2:13*

BOSTON:  
AMERICAN TRACT SOCIETY  
1860

RIVERSIDE, CAMBRIDGE:  
STEREOTYPED AND PRINTED BY  
H. O. HOUGHTON AND COMPANY

TO  
**The Unitarians of England,**  
AND TO ANY OTHERS WHO CONFESS OR CONCEAL DOUBTS  
REGARDING THE MYSTERIES OF THE FAITH,  
THIS TREATISE,  
ACCOMPANIED WITH MANY PRAYERS,  
IS, IN ALL HUMILITY, ADDRESSED BY  
THE AUTHOR

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1860, by  
E. P. Dutton and Company,  
in the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the District of Massachusetts

# Contents

Foreword.....	1
<i>The Testimony of Jesus</i> .....	2
<i>Brief Background</i> .....	3
<i>E. J. Waggoner Explains</i> .....	4
<i>Considering the Pioneers</i> .....	5
<i>Oneness</i> .....	21
<i>The Catholic View</i> .....	22
<i>Speculations About the Holy Spirit</i> .....	25
<i>Problems With a Limited View of Christ</i> .....	26
<i>Holding to Revealed Truth</i> .....	28
<i>Christ as Connector</i> .....	30
<i>True Sabbath-keeping</i> .....	31
Preface.....	33
1. Preparation for the Study.....	36
2. Trust in God, the Creator.....	46
1. <i>Contrast Between Man and God</i> .....	46
2. <i>Prohibitions and Precepts</i> .....	49
3. <i>Jealousy of the Creator</i> .....	50
3. Trust in the Lord Jesus Christ.....	54
<i>Is the Father Eternal?</i> .....	55
<i>Is the Father Omnipresent?</i> .....	56
<i>Is the Father Immutable?</i> .....	57
<i>Is the Father Almighty?</i> .....	57
<i>Is the Father Incomprehensible and All-Knowing?</i> .....	58
<i>Is the Father Infinitely Good and Holy?</i> .....	59
<i>Is the Father the Creator, Preserver, and Governor?</i> .....	60
<i>Is the Father the Searcher of Hearts?</i> .....	61
<i>Is the Father the Most High Judge of All?</i> .....	61
4. The Deity of Jesus Christ.....	74
1. <i>Comparison of Attributes, Majesty, and Claims</i> .....	74
2. <i>Appearances of Jehovah</i> .....	86
3. <i>Prayer and Worship</i> .....	88
4. <i>Conjunction of Names</i> .....	99
5. <i>Explicit Assertions</i> .....	105

5. The Condescension of Christ.....	125
1. <i>The Glory That Christ Set Aside</i> .....	125
2. <i>God Manifest in the Flesh</i> .....	127
3. <i>Humanity and Divinity Combined</i> .....	132
4. <i>Humanity Exalted Through Christ</i> .....	141
6. The Divinity of the Holy Spirit.....	154
1. <i>A Separate Person</i> .....	155
2. <i>The Properties of Personality</i> .....	158
3. <i>The Nature of the Spirit</i> .....	166
4. <i>The Spirit is Worshipped</i> .....	171
5. <i>The Spirit is Jehovah and God</i> .....	177
7. Life in the Godhead.....	183
1. <i>God Known by Revelation, Not Reason</i> .....	183
2. <i>The Unity of the Godhead</i> .....	189
3. <i>Practical Faith, Not Creedal Perfection</i> .....	199
4. <i>Faith in the Godhead is Essential</i> .....	205
5. <i>The Work of the Godhead in Our Salvation</i> .....	214



# Foreword

**T**HIS book, originally published in 1860, is probably one of the most complete defences of the Christian view of the God-head, that it is composed of three immortal, eternal, and all-powerful persons: the Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

The author, Edward Henry Bickersteth (1825-1906), was the son of another Anglican minister, Edward Bickersteth (1786-1850). His father, interestingly enough, played a role in the Advent revival in Britain, having written a comprehensive book entitled *A Practical Guide to the Prophecies* [1823], and having come to conclusions similar to those arrived at by the American Advent revival that was to take place in the 1830's and 1840's. About the usefulness of a study of prophecy, his father wrote (on March 10, 1836):

Part of my mind may be seen in my *Guide to the Prophecies*, but I trust that I see things more clearly now than I did then. The hope of our Lord's coming is a grand animating spring of liberality. Only the other day I had £100 sent me for the Jews' Society,<sup>1</sup> by one who felt this from my work on "Prophecy." Nothing can be more unworthy of our cause, and of our Master, than the scanty contributions which professing Christians have yet given, because not yet raised to the blessed hope and prospect of the latter day, and the sweet enjoyment of God's love by faith in His word.<sup>2</sup>

As far as I know, Edward, the son, did not seem to follow in his father's footsteps so far as the study of prophecy is concerned. Nevertheless, he produced some good things, one of which is this book.

Now the question might be asked, "Why publish this old book, in such a modern day?" The burden that led to my decision to put this book on my website is that many sincere Adventists are now

---

<sup>1</sup> Society for the Conversion of the Jews.

<sup>2</sup> Quoted in *Memoir of the Rev. Edward Bickersteth*, vol. 2, 1851, p. 81.

being led astray into strange paths regarding the doctrine of the Godhead. They take particular offense at the word, “trinity,” which some of the early pioneers of Adventism spoke against. I will consider some of the pioneer statements shortly.

## The Testimony of Jesus

But first let’s consider a few words from the prophetic voice to Adventism, Ellen G. White:

### **Australasian Union Conference Record, Oct. 7, 1907:**

Those who have by baptism given to God a pledge of their faith in Christ, and their death to the old life of sin, have entered into covenant relation with God. The *three powers of the Godhead, the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit*, are pledged to be their strength and their efficiency in their new life in Christ Jesus.

### **The Desire of Ages, p. 671:**

The power of evil had been strengthening for centuries, and the submission of men to this satanic captivity was amazing. Sin could be resisted and overcome only through the mighty agency of the *Third Person of the Godhead*, who would come with no modified energy, but in the fullness of divine power.

### **Evangelism, p. 615:**

There are *three living persons of the heavenly trio*; in the name of these three great powers—the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit—those who receive Christ by living faith are baptized, and these powers will co-operate with the obedient subjects of heaven in their efforts to live the new life in Christ.<sup>3</sup>

That there are three persons in the Godhead, should therefore not present a problem to anyone who believes the voice of God’s prophet. To deny this truth, just because some label it as the “trinity,” would be wrong. It is important to note that the word “trinity” never occurs in the writings of Ellen G. White. I will consider this fact again later.

---

<sup>3</sup> *Special Testimonies, Series B*, No. 7, pp. 62, 63. (1905).



## Brief Background

Now let's briefly discuss the word "trinity." It was coined to describe the Christian idea of three persons in the Godhead, and means "tri-unity," or "three-in-oneness." What many people think when they hear the word, is simply this: that there are three persons in the Godhead, and they are all divine. With this concept, every Advent believer should be able to agree.

Now let's consider the darker side. The topic of the trinity was a cause of a lot of grief and debate in the church, especially in the years from 320 to 420 AD. Fine speculative points were drawn up, and then parties would take sides on these issues. Human minds attempted to understand and define God's nature, when He had not chosen to reveal those things.

God's chosen way of communication, when He has new light to bring to the church, is to raise up a messenger, whom He then gives a message. These are described in *Revelation* chapter 1 as the stars of the churches, which Christ holds in His right hand.

But instead of waiting for God to solve these matters in His own time and way, men usurped the role of messenger and thought their own wisdom to search into the mysteries of God was all-sufficient. Perhaps they would have claimed that God was leading them, and that they were defending "the glory of God." But the fruit of their work proved otherwise. What followed was a lot of strife and debate, and whichever party was able to get the powers of the church hierarchy, and sometimes the state power, on their side, persecuted those who disagreed with them. I will not go into the history of those times, but it can be read in books of church history, and particularly in the book, *Ecclesiastical Empire*, by A. T. Jones.

So there are some very speculative statements and fine-spun theological ideas also associated with the word, "trinity." These, of course, must be discarded as "wood, hay, and stubble,"<sup>4</sup> by any se-

---

<sup>4</sup> 1 *Corinthians* 3:12.

rious candidate for heaven. At the same time, care must be taken not to discard truth with error.

### **E. J. Waggoner Explains**

E. J. Waggoner, a messenger sent by God to the Advent people in the late 1800's, had this to say, when asked, "Do you believe in the Trinity?"

If I knew what you meant by the term, I might tell you; but from the days of Athanasius until now all discussion about the Trinity has been an attempt to define the indefinable and the incomprehensible. Thousands have been put to death for not professing belief in a formula which even its professors could not comprehend, nor state in terms that anybody else could comprehend. The Scriptures reveal "One God and Father of all," our Lord Jesus Christ, who is the brightness of the Father's glory, and "the eternal Spirit" through whom Christ offered himself and was raised from the dead; but we do not profess any knowledge of them beyond what the Scriptures give us. In teaching and preaching the Gospel we always confine ourselves strictly to Scripture terms and language; those who manufacture terms must be looked to for definitions of them. It is safest not to presume to define what the Bible has not defined, nor to attempt to explain infinity.<sup>5</sup>

At another time, he stated:

You ask what we teach about the Trinity. Inasmuch as we find no such expression in the Scriptures, we do not teach anything about it. But as to the Being of God,—the Godhead,—Divinity as revealed in the Father, the Word (the Son), and the Holy Spirit, we believe and teach just what the Bible says, and nothing else. No man can by searching find out God. No creature can understand the Almighty to perfection. The finite mind cannot comprehend infinity. Therefore, discussions about the Trinity, about the nature of God, Christ, and the Holy Spirit, *are manifestations of gross presumption.*<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>5</sup> *Present Truth*, July 30, 1903.

<sup>6</sup> *Present Truth*, February 6, 1902.

## Considering the Pioneers

Now let's consider some statements from the Advent pioneers. I'll make the point first that these men were not specifically called as messengers to the church. God did not specifically call them to give an anti-trinitarian message to the church. They were earnest workers, who believed in the Advent doctrines. Were they immune to what Waggoner called "manifestations of gross presumption"? Not at all. No man is immune from making mistakes, especially when he ventures onto the ground of unrevealed truth.

As quoted above, Ellen White clearly spoke of the three persons of the Godhead. If the pioneers protested against this, then they were in error, because this is revealed truth. It may not be very exalting to our pride to think of the pioneers as being in error; but when God gave soul-saving truth via A. T. Jones and E. J. Waggoner, in 1888 and thereafter, how few there were who really wholeheartedly accepted that message and promulgated it. If they did not recognize God's voice speaking through His message then, via an audible voice, how much more likely were they to err when following their own ideas and impressions of truth.

Now let's look at a sampling of the quotes that are often used from the writings of these men.

### J. N. ANDREWS

#### **J. N. Andrews, Review and Herald, Sept. 7, 1869:**

And as to the Son of God, He would be excluded also, for He had God for His Father, and did, some point at the eternity of the past, have beginning of days. So that if we use Paul's language in an absolute sense, it would be impossible to find but one being in the universe, and that is God the Father, who is without father, or mother, or descent, or beginning of days, or end of life.

J. N. Andrews is referring to the statement,

#### **Hebrews 7**

<sup>3</sup> Without father, or mother, or descent, or beginning of days, or end of life...

This is spoken about the Melchizedek priesthood, as formed by Jesus Christ. The verse goes on to say,

**Hebrews 7**

<sup>3</sup> ...but *made like unto the Son of God.*

Andrews says that these words, “without father, or mother, or descent, or beginning of days, or end of life,” can only apply, in the absolute sense, to the Father. Paul in *Hebrews*, under inspiration, applies that description to the Son. I’ll take God’s revelation over man’s speculation. Andrews was wrong on this point.

**JOSEPH BATES**

**Joseph Bates, Past and Present Experience, p. 187:**

How could Daniel explain his vision of the 7<sup>th</sup> chapter, if “Christ was God”? Here he sees one “like the Son (and it cannot be proved that it was any other person) of man, and there was given Him Dominion, and Glory, and a kingdom;” by the Ancient of days. Then John describes one seated on a throne with a book in His right hand, and he distinctly saw Jesus come up to the throne and take the book out of the hand of Him that sat thereon. Now if it is possible to make these two entirely different transactions appear in one person, then I could believe that God died and was buried instead of Jesus, and that Paul was mistaken when he said, “Now the God of peace that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus that great shepherd of the sheep” &c., and that Jesus also did not mean what He said when He asserted that He came from God, and was going to God, &c.&c.; and much more, if necessary, to prove the utter absurdity of such a faith.

**SABELLIANISM**

To understand this statement, and many others like it, we need to know something about the development of the speculative ideas that swirled around the Trinity doctrine. There was a teaching called “modalism,” or “monarchianism,” or “Sabellianism,” which claimed (in order to avoid having two Gods), that the Father and Son were one and the same person, or that the divine persons

were somehow mystically mixed up into each other. *Wikipedia* states:

In Christian theology, Sabellianism is the belief that there is only one Person...in the Godhead. For example, Hanson defines Sabellianism as the “refusal to acknowledge the distinct existence of the Persons” and “Eustathius was condemned for Sabellianism. His insistence that there is only one distinct reality (hypostasis) in the Godhead, and his confusion about distinguishing Father, Son and Holy Spirit laid him open to such a charge.” Condemned as heresy, *Sabellianism has been rejected by the majority of Christian churches.*<sup>7</sup>

So this is not the Trinity doctrine held by the majority of churches claiming to be Christian. Even the Catholic church does not hold to this idea of the Trinity. We will see over and over, in the Advent pioneer statements, a condemnation of this idea, and a labeling of it as the teaching of the Trinity. It is this idea that Joseph Bates was referring to in the quotation above.

But before we go on, I'd like to dwell for a moment on the scene in *Revelation* 5, which Joseph Bates mentioned. Edward Irving, in his writings on the book of *Revelation*, argues that the manifestation of the Father, as the Ancient of Days, or as the one seated on the throne in *Revelation* 4 and 5, is only made possible via the Son.<sup>8</sup> That is, the Father is by nature invisible, or beyond the capacity of creatures to behold, and therefore must be revealed by the Son at all times. Any visible manifestation of the Father takes place through the Son. Hence we do not see two persons sitting on the throne in *Revelation*, and yet Jesus is...

### **Revelation 3**

<sup>21</sup> ...set down with [His] Father in His throne.

So in this sense, Joseph Bates was not entirely correct. Or perhaps it is better to say, that he just did not see the greater depth of meaning in the text he was dealing with.

---

<sup>7</sup> Emphasis added.

<sup>8</sup> See *The Revelation of Jesus Christ*, Book 11, “The Vision of Heaven.”

## J. N. LOUGHBOROUGH

### **J. N. Loughborough, Review and Herald, Nov. 5, 1861:**

It is not very consonant with common sense to talk of three being one, and one being three. Or as some express it, calling God “the Triune God,” or “the three-one-God.” If Father, Son, and Holy Ghost are each God, it would be three Gods; for three times one is not one, but three.

This is the standard Unitarian, modalist, or Arian argument. It is stated in the *Wikipedia* article on “Sabellianism”:

Modalists note that the only number expressly and repeatedly ascribed to God in the Old Testament is One, [and] do not accept interpreting this number as denoting union (*i.e. Genesis 2:24*) when it is applied to God.

The verse in *Genesis 2:24* refers to man and woman being “one flesh.” If we accept that there can be two persons in a marriage who are said to be “one flesh,” then why can we not accept that there can be three persons in the Godhead who are said to be one God? Loughborough continues:

### **J. N. Loughborough, Review and Herald, Nov. 5, 1861:**

There is a sense in which they are one, but not one person, as claimed by trinitarians.

But Loughborough gives no quotes from trinitarians to show what they believed. And indeed, most orthodox trinitarians DO NOT believe that the three persons of the Godhead are ONE PERSON! This is rather sloppy scholarship.

It is contrary to Scripture. Almost any portion of the New Testament we may open which has occasion to speak of the Father and Son, represents them as two distinct persons.

Again, Loughborough is confusing the orthodox view of the Trinity, with a non-orthodox view that was deemed heretical. Even one of the Pope’s of Rome would agree with Loughborough:

Pope Dionysius, Bishop of Rome from A.D. 259–269 wrote: “Sabellius...blasphemes in saying that the Son himself is the Father and vice versa.”<sup>9</sup>

So this trinitarian Pope, and J. N. Loughborough, were in complete harmony! I wonder what he would have thought of that?

### J. G. MATTESON

#### **J. G. Matteson, Review and Herald, Oct. 12, 1869:**

Christ is the only literal Son of God. “The only begotten of the Father.” *John* 1:14. He is God because He is the Son of God; not by virtue of His resurrection. If Christ is the only begotten of the Father, then we cannot be begotten of the Father in a literal sense. It can only be in a secondary sense of the word.

It would have been better if some of the pioneers would not have speculated and spoken upon topics which God had not revealed light. To “speak as the oracles of God”<sup>10</sup> means to speak what He gives, and not our own ideas. There is unity in speaking about what God has taught us through His appointed messengers, and disunity when each one pursues his own idea of truth.

Also, it’s a bit nonsensical to say that “we cannot be begotten of the Father *in a literal sense*,” when the Bible plainly states:

#### **1 Peter 1**

<sup>3</sup> Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to His abundant mercy has begotten us again.

#### **1 John 6**

<sup>18</sup> We know that whosoever is born of God sins not; but he that is begotten of God keeps himself, and that wicked one touches him not.

If this being “born of God” is not literal, then what kind of birth is it? Imaginary? When the life of Jesus was put into a created body, there was a birth: the union of two natures, divine and created. And when the life of Jesus is put into our mortal flesh, there

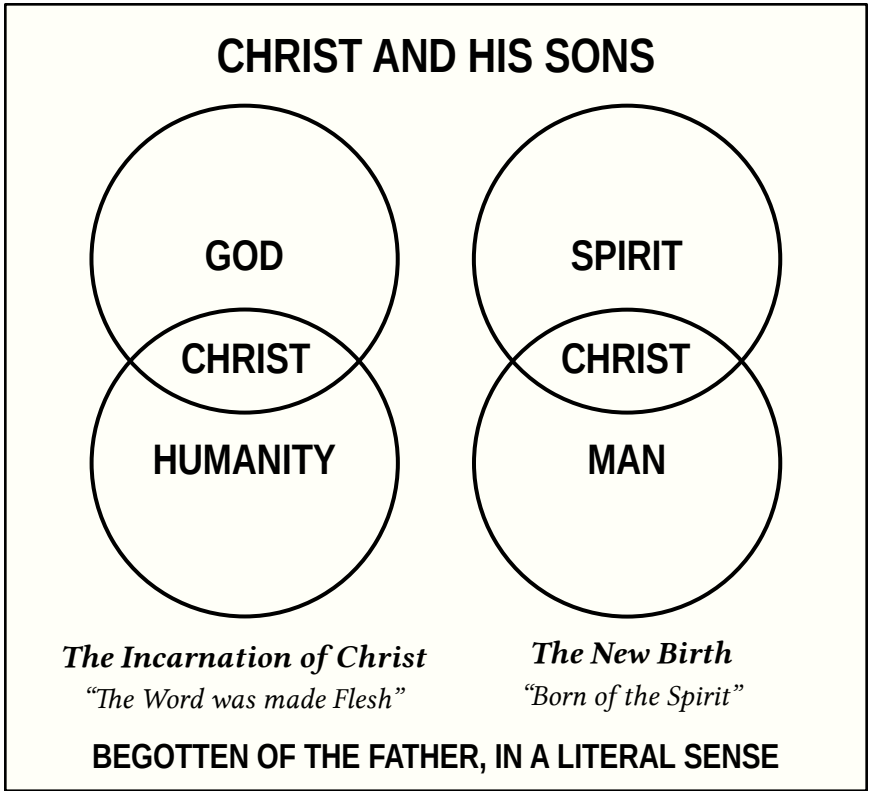
---

<sup>9</sup> *Wikipedia*, article: “Sabellianism.”

<sup>10</sup> *1 Peter* 4:11.



is a birth again, the union of two natures, divine and created. It is just as literal as the birth of Christ.



Because our humanity is fallen, and we are born with spiritual natures that are fallen, separated from God, we are said to receive the...

**Galatians 4**

<sup>5</sup> ...adoption of sons.

We are taken from another family, and brought into the family of God. But it is all done by a very literal birth, in the spiritual nature. It is not imaginary, and not figurative. And this birth is preceded by a spiritual death, the death of the old man, which frees us from the family of Satan, whose image we bore.

**Ministry of Healing, p. 115:**

The life of God in the soul is man's only hope.

Let's look more closely at one last phrase from Matteson:

**J. G. Matteson, Review and Herald, Oct. 12, 1869:**

He is God because He is the Son of God; not by virtue of His resurrection.

Actually, this is only partly incorrect. He is ALSO the Son of God because of His resurrection, as this verse points out:

**Acts 13**

<sup>33</sup> God has fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that He has raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, You are my Son, *this day* have I begotten you.

In what sense was Christ the “begotten Son” by the resurrection? Go back to the previous paragraphs. Every time the life of God is put into a creature form, it is a begetting, a birth. When Christ rose, His divine life was put into a new form: glorified humanity. Therefore it was a birth, and the scripture was fulfilled,

<sup>33</sup> You are my Son, this day have I begotten you.

**D. M. CANRIGHT / R. F. COTRELL**

**D. M. Canright, Review and Herald, Aug. 29, 1878:**

The Bible says nothing about the Trinity. God never mentions it, Jesus never named it, the apostles never did. Now men dare to call God, Trinity, Triune, etc.

**R. F. Cottrell, Review and Herald, June 1, 1869:**

The Trinity, or the triune God, is unknown to the Bible; and I have entertained the idea that doctrines which require words coined in the human mind to express them, are coined doctrines.

Let's apply the logic of this argument given by Canright and Cottrell to some basic Adventist doctrines:

- The Bible never mentions the word “investigative” with respect to the judgment. Therefore the “investigative judgment” is a “coined doctrine” and should be discarded.

- The Bible never uses the terms “immersion, immerse, immersed” when describing baptism. Therefore baptism by “immersion” is a “coined doctrine” and should be discarded.

Let’s remember also that the Bible never uses the term, “Seventh-day Adventist”! In bringing up these examples, I’m not denying their truth, I’m simply trying to show that sometimes we need to use extra-Biblical words to make a truth clear, especially when that truth has been misinterpreted, and come to mean something else to the common mind. In those cases, extra-biblical words are used to describe a Bible teaching, in order to differentiate it from errors or misconceptions, or to clarify the truth.

These two pioneers were not consistent, for if they had applied what they taught to their own beliefs, they would have had to discard some key Adventist doctrines.

#### URIAH SMITH

##### **Uriah Smith, Daniel and the Revelation, p. 430, 1882:**

To the Lamb, equally with the Father who sits upon the throne, praise is ascribed in this song of adoration. Commentators, with great unanimity, have seized upon this as proof that Christ must be coeval with the Father; for otherwise, say they, here would be worship paid to the creature which belongs only to the Creator. But this does not seem to be a necessary conclusion.

The Scriptures nowhere speak of Christ as a created being, but on the contrary plainly state that He was begotten of the Father...But while as the Son He does not possess a co-eternity of past existence with the Father, the beginning of His existence, as the begotten of the Father, antedates the entire work of creation, in relation to which He stands as joint creator with God. *John* 1:3; *Hebrews* 1:2.

Okay, let’s hold right there: “...while as the Son He does not possess a co-eternity of past existence with the Father.” Is this true?

##### **Provers 8**

<sup>23</sup> I was set up from everlasting.

How far back in the past does “everlasting” go?

### **Hebrews 7**

<sup>3</sup> Without father, without mother, without descent, *having neither beginning of days, nor end of life...*

No “beginning of days”? Is that not the very description of “co-eternity of past existence with the Father”? True, we might say that before creation, there was no need for Christ to take the form of a creature, and therefore His begetting, or manifestation in a created body, may have had a beginning. But even this is rather speculative, as the Scriptures seem to be silent on this, and we should avoid speculation on the Godhead, unless we desire to be guilty of “gross presumption,” as Waggoner termed it.

### **Micah 5**

<sup>2</sup> But you, Bethlehem Ephratah, though you be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of you shall He come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, *from everlasting.*

Again, “from everlasting,” means no beginning of days. It is “co-eternity of past existence with the Father.”

### **John 8**

<sup>58</sup> Before Abraham was, I AM.

Here, Christ claims the title of the eternal Jehovah, the very meaning of which seems to indicate eternity of existence in past, present and future.

### **Isaiah 9**

<sup>6</sup> For unto us a child is born...The everlasting Father.

Again, the same idea of eternity of existence. But let’s go back to Uriah Smith:

### **Uriah Smith, Daniel and the Revelation, p. 430, 1882:**

Could not the Father ordain that to such a being worship should be rendered equally with himself, without its being idolatry on the part of the worshiper?

No, actually He couldn't. There is an infinite distance between the Creator, who possesses life and immortality in himself, and a creature, who is finite and dependent. To worship any creature would be to exalt the creation as equal with the Creator. What does the Bible say?

**Matthew 4**

<sup>10</sup> You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him only shall you serve.

**Isaiah 42**

<sup>8</sup> I am the Lord: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another.

The only reason Christ could be worshipped is that He possessed, in himself, the nature of the Creator, possessing life and immortality in himself. This life is underived, unborrowed, uncreated. That is what it means to be God.

**The Desire of Ages, p. 530:**

In Christ is life, original, unborrowed, underived.

**Evangelism, p. 616:**

While God's Word speaks of the humanity of Christ when upon this earth, it also speaks decidedly regarding His pre-existence. The Word existed as a divine being, even as the eternal Son of God, in union and oneness with His Father. From everlasting He was the Mediator of the covenant, the one in whom all nations of the earth, both Jews and Gentiles, if they accepted Him, were to be blessed. "The Word was with God, and the Word was God." Before men or angels were created, the Word was with God, and was God.<sup>11</sup>

Christ shows them that, although they might reckon His life to be less than fifty years, yet His divine life could not be reckoned by human computation. The existence of Christ before His incarnation is *not measured by figures*.<sup>12</sup>

Now back to Uriah Smith:

---

<sup>11</sup> *Review and Herald*, April 5, 1906.

<sup>12</sup> *Signs of the Times*, May 3, 1899.

**Uriah Smith, Daniel and the Revelation, p. 430, 1882:**

He has raised Him to positions which make it proper that He should be worshipped, and has even commanded that worship should be rendered Him, which would not have been necessary had He been equal with the Father in eternity of existence.

The only position that Christ could be in, to “make it proper that He should be worshipped,” is the position of being eternal and immortal. Since God does not give this glory to another, Christ had it from eternity.

The reasoning in the last sentence, that it “would not have been necessary” for the Father to command worship of the Son, if “He had been equal with the Father in eternity of existence,” overlooks the fact that the divinity of the Son was housed in a created body. Before Christ’s incarnation in Bethlehem, He appeared as “the angel of the Lord,” in the Old Testament. When He walked the Earth as a man, very few recognized His divine nature. Spiritual things are spiritually discerned.

Uriah Smith continues:

**Uriah Smith, Daniel and the Revelation, p. 430, 1882:**

Christ himself declares that “as the Father has life in himself, so has He given to the Son to have life in himself.” *John* 5:26. The Father has “highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name.” *Philippians* 2:9. And the Father himself says, “Let all the angels of God worship Him.” *Hebrews* 1:6. These testimonies show that Christ is now an object of worship equally with the Father; but they do not prove that with Him He holds an eternity of past existence.

Well if Christ could be made “an object of worship” by His spotless performance, then we humans could also be worshipped when we do good. And this is the very foundation of human exaltation. It’s not so surprising then, that Uriah Smith, and some of the other pioneers had great difficulty with the 1888 message. That message told them that they were “wretched, and miserable,

and poor, and blind, and naked,”<sup>13</sup> but all along there was a doctrinal foundation laid that supported pride and exaltation in ones performance.

Uriah Smith had one of the most active pens, and yet the real gospel teaching is hard to find in most of his writings. His treatment of *Daniel* and the *Revelation* is very complete with respect to historical details and outward doctrine, but very lacking with respect to real spirituality. To see this lack, compare Uriah Smith’s treatment of *Revelation* with Edward Irving’s books on the same topic. Irving’s writings do not have the same accuracy with respect to history and doctrine, but are full of spirituality.

The same lack is seen in some of the other works of the pioneers. Loughborough’s book on *The Great Second Advent Movement* is interesting with respect to the details about the rise of the Advent movement, but the latter half of the book is full of “glory to the church” as he lists off the numbers and growth of Adventist institutions. Granted, he intends this to give glory to God, by attempting to show that this growth was due to following God’s instructions, but alas! thousands of members, many publishing houses, schools, and medical treatment centers, cannot do the work that Christ and His twelve apostles did, without any of those means.

George Butler, another pioneer, had great difficulty with the 1888 message, ever since his dispute with Waggoner over the book of *Galatians*. He never did seem to accept that message, or even to see and understand its significance. This shows that even though a man may be called a “pioneer,” this does not give his views of Scripture an automatic pass. They possessed weak humanity, just as we do.

And so, to summarize what we have found in the statements from the pioneers:

---

<sup>13</sup> *Revelation* 3:17.



1. In some statements they use unsound principles of argumentation: applying a rule to the word “Trinity” that they did not apply to their own doctrines.
2. In other statements they misrepresented the orthodox trinitarian position.
3. And in yet other statements, they were speculating about the Godhead, and thus manifesting what E. J. Waggoner called “gross presumption.”

### **JAMES WHITE**

There is one more pioneer that I should mention: James White. Apart from the influence of Ellen White’s prophetic gift, James White’s contributions in writing, organizing and laboring to build up the early Seventh-day Adventist church were without peer. He could rightly be called “the pioneer of pioneers.” Therefore, we should consider his testimony regarding the Godhead.

But first, let’s establish his spiritual qualifications. When his wife, Ellen, heard the 1888 message for the first time, she said,

**Manuscript Releases, vol. 5, p. 219:**

When Brother Waggoner brought out these ideas in Minneapolis, it was the first clear teaching on this subject from any human lips I had heard, *excepting the conversations between myself and my husband.*

If she had conversations with James White that were as clear as the gospel teachings given in 1888, then James White certainly must have had a good grasp of the gospel. He was foremost among the pioneers, leading out in the publishing work and other branches, and sacrificing his life for the cause he loved.

His writings also show a deep grasp of the truth, not just in historical and doctrinal detail, but in spirituality. Nevertheless, there are a few statements that some modern-day teachers have seized upon, to try and support their arian views. Here is one of them:

### **The Review and Herald, January 4, 1881:**

The Father was greater than the Son in that He was first. The Son was equal with the Father in that He had received all things from the Father.

Taken by itself, without any surrounding context, this might almost seem to support an Arian view of Christ. But that very article has other statements that deny this view. Here are the sentences immediately preceding this quotation:

In creation, and in the institution of law, *the Son was equal with the Father*. In the beginning, before the fall, God said, "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness." *Genesis* 1:26. Compare with this statement, words that are found in one of the gospels: "In the beginning was the Word [Christ], and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." *John* 1:1. It was God the Father that said to *God the Son*, "Let us make man."

In His exaltation, before He humbled himself to the work of redeeming lost sinners, Christ thought it not robbery to be equal with God, because, in the work of creation and the institution of law to govern created intelligences, *He was equal with the Father*.

Here James White plainly recognizes Christ's equality with the Father, especially in the period before His humiliation. But if there still were any doubt, James White wrote another article a few years before this, in which he states his view even more emphatically. The article is titled, "Christ Equal With God," and is found in *The Review and Herald*, November 29, 1877. I will quote the whole article as it is not too long:

Paul affirms of the Son of God that He was in the form of God, and that He was equal with God. "Who being in the form of God thought it not robbery to be equal with God." *Philippians* 2:6. The reason why it is not robbery for the Son to be equal with the Father is the fact that *He is equal*. If the Son is not equal with the Father, then it is robbery for Him to rank himself with the Father.

The inexplicable trinity that makes the godhead three in one and one in three, is bad enough; but that ultra Unitarianism that

makes *Christ inferior to the Father is worse*. Did God say to an inferior, "Let us make man in our image?"

The great mistake of the Unitarian is in taking Christ when enfeebled with our nature as the standard of what He was with the Father before the creation of the world, and what He will be when all divine, seated beside the Father on His eternal throne.

True, Christ prayed to a superior. This is during the time of His humiliation, when enfeebled by the seed of Abraham. There was no such dependence before He humbled himself that He might reach the feeble sinner in all his weakness and shame. Neither will there be when Christ shall be seated at the right hand of power in Heaven.

We may look upon the Father and the Son before the worlds were made as a creating and law administering firm of equal power. Christ did not then rob God in regarding himself equal with the Father.

Sin enters the world and the fall occurs. Christ steps out of this firm for a certain time, and takes upon himself the weakness of the seed of Abraham, that He may reach those who are enfeebled by transgression. With His divine arm our adorable Redeemer has hold of the throne of Heaven, and with His human arm He reaches to the depths of human wretchedness, and thus He becomes the connecting link between Heaven and earth, a mediator between God and man.

We notice the steps leading from Christ's position with the Father before the worlds were made, down to His being made weak on account of the sinner, then up to His final position, strength, and glory.

1. Before the fall He was equal with God.
2. When He accepted the position as Redeemer with all its dependence and agony, then He laid aside His glory as one of the creating and law administering firm. This glory He left with the Father, and then and there made himself of no reputation.
3. He next in due time became obedient to the death of the cross.
4. From this point He rises. God highly exalted Christ at the resurrection. Then and there He left the seed of Abraham, so

that it was the divine Son of God that arose from the dead and ascended to Heaven.

5. Then was there given Him a name above men and holy angels.

6. Of all created intelligences in Heaven and on earth every knee will bow to Jesus Christ, and every tongue will confess. Redemption is then completed, and again the Son is equal with the Father.

The question of the state of the dead is not a practical subject. And yet we discuss it in order to warn the people against spiritualism. The question of the trinity and the unity is not practical, and yet we call attention to it to guard the people against that terrible heresy that takes from our all-conquering Redeemer His divine power.

Here it is abundantly clear that James White fully believed in, and supported the equality of the Son with the Father, on the divine side. He recognizes the weakness and dependence that the Son took upon Him in becoming man, but also recognizes that when Christ arose and ascended to heaven as a conqueror, He was again “equal with the Father.” Perhaps more could be said about Christ’s position in heaven, possessing redeemed humanity, that may further refine the position that James White has described here, but that is beyond the scope of this Foreword. I only wanted to show that James White, in no sense of the word, considered Christ to be less than the Father, in the divine nature.

I must also notice that he refers to a form of Trinity teaching:

“The inexplicable trinity that makes the godhead three in one and one in three...”

Here, in common with many of the other pioneers, he is addressing those speculations surrounding the doctrine of the Godhead, in which man seeks to explain the unexplainable. He is not against the equality of divine Persons in the Godhead, but he is opposed to speculations that attempt to frame the Godhead with narrow human ideas.

## **Oneness**

We must make a difference between the simple understanding of God manifesting himself in three Persons (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit), and the human speculations that were later added, in attempting to explain how this is done, and how the three can be “one God.” We will simply adhere to E. J. Waggoner’s statement that:

“...discussions about the Trinity, about the nature of God, Christ, and the Holy Spirit, *are manifestations of gross presumption.*”

We know that...

### **Deuteronomy 6**

<sup>4</sup> The Lord our God is one Lord.

We know also that when a man and woman join themselves together in marriage, God states that:

### **Genesis 2**

<sup>24</sup> ...they shall be one flesh.

We know that Christ stated,

### **John 10**

<sup>30</sup> I and my Father are one,

—and then later prayed that His disciples...

### **John 17**

<sup>11</sup> ...may be one, as we are.

In speaking of the church, Paul stated,

### **1 Corinthians 12**

<sup>20</sup> But now are they many members, yet but one body.

The oneness of the church in the body of Christ, and the oneness of the man and woman in marriage, do not require that the persons involved be somehow mashed together into one lump. The union is spiritual, not carnal.

## The Catholic View

When the disputes over the Godhead took place within the church in the 4<sup>th</sup> and 5<sup>th</sup> century, there was a lot of controversy over fine points, trying to explain how the union of three Persons in the Godhead still resulted in “one God.” There was talk about a sharing of *substance*, and in this way, men sought to explain the “oneness” of God, who yet was revealed in three Persons. Men came up with the word “consubstantial,” which means “of the same substance, or nature.” But in the end, it was just another word for something that they knew nothing about. Nobody can describe the metaphysical makeup of the divine nature, for it has never been revealed.

Let’s look at what the Catholic church says about the Trinity, as this will help us to differentiate between the true doctrine of the Godhead, as revealed in Scripture, and the false teaching, rooted in human speculation:

### **Handbook for Today’s Catholic, p. 16:**

The mystery of the Trinity is the central doctrine of Catholic faith. Upon it are based all the other teachings of the church.

I have before stated that the simple belief in three Persons in the Godhead, which Ellen White supports, and which the Scriptures also reveal in their plainest meaning, is NOT the same as the Trinity teaching *as held by the Catholic Church*. Let me just quote from a Catholic website:<sup>14</sup>

In order to understand the concept of person in God, we have to understand its foundation in the processions and relations within the inner life of God. And the Council of Florence, 1338-1445 AD, can help us in this regard.

The Council’s definitions concerning the Trinity are really as easy as one, two, three... four. It taught there is one nature in God, and that there are two processions, three persons, and four relations that constitute the Blessed Trinity. The Son “proceeds” from the Father, and the Holy Spirit “proceeds from the Father

---

<sup>14</sup> [www.catholic.com/magazine/online-edition/explaining-the-trinity](http://www.catholic.com/magazine/online-edition/explaining-the-trinity).

and the Son.” These are the two processions in God. And these are foundational to the four relations that constitute the three persons in God. These are those four eternal relations in God:

1. The Father actively and eternally generates the Son, constituting the person of God, the Father.

2. The Son is passively generated of the Father, which constitutes the person of the Son.

3. The Father and the Son actively spirate the Holy Spirit in the one relation within the inner life of God that does not constitute a person. It does not do so because the Father and Son are already constituted as persons in relation to each other in the first two relations. This is why CCC 240 teaches, “[The Second Person of the Blessed Trinity] is Son only in relation to his Father.”

4. The Holy Spirit is passively spirated of the Father and the Son, constituting the person of the Holy Spirit.

As you can see in this explanation (and there are probably other explanations that are even more theological), there are terms and details that go well beyond the simple statements of Scripture.

“The Holy Spirit is *passively spirated* of the Father and the Son...!?”

Chapter and verse? This kind of theoretical language may sound very impressive, but behind it is nothing of any consequence. God has not revealed how the Godhead is constructed. So man’s speculations can add nothing to our knowledge. These kinds of statements are just an outward show, a pretension of knowledge.

Furthermore, while the Catholic Church may consider their definition of the Godhead as “the central doctrine” upon which all her other teachings are based, this should not distract us from realizing that the real problem of the Catholic Church is the spirit of self-exaltation. Attempting to define the trinity, beyond what the Scriptures say, is just a manifestation of that spirit.

If we were to discard the teaching of the “three persons of the Godhead,” because we thought it was the same as the Trinity



teaching espoused by the Catholic Church, this does not necessarily free us from the spirit of self-exaltation, especially if we then go on to form our own speculative interpretation to try and explain the Godhead.

Self-exaltation is the sin we must be constantly on guard against, if we are to stand successfully in resisting the Papal apostasy. The focus in the Catholic Church is what “man” can do:

- Man’s understanding of God is exalted.
- Man’s explanation of God’s nature is exalted, and framed in creeds made by man.
- Man’s leadership of the church is exalted.
- Man’s way of dealing with supposed heretics is exalted.
- Human ceremonies are exalted.
- Human ideas are encapsulated in images and statues and are worshiped.
- Trust is placed in the “works of man” in “penance” and other sacrifices.
- Man’s choice of a holy day is exalted.

There is an excellent booklet on our website titled, *The Image of a Man*<sup>15</sup> that I would encourage you to read, as it deals with this exact problem of human exaltation in religion.

I also encourage you to read chapter 3 in *The Great Controversy*, “An Era of Spiritual Darkness.” It covers the rise of the spirit of self-exaltation in the early church. Not once does it mention the Trinity.<sup>16</sup> This shows that the problem is not a particular doctrine, but rather the spirit of self-exaltation, which pollutes all the doctrines of the church, including baptism, the Lord’s Supper, confession of sin, etc.

---

<sup>15</sup> By Robert Brinsmead.

<sup>16</sup> As mentioned before, the word “trinity” is not found in the writings of Ellen G. White.

Even if one would discard a teaching which he regarded as “the Trinity,” in hopes thereby of escaping “Babylon,” it would not necessarily free him from the spirit of self-exaltation. While there are some doctrines that encourage self-exaltation, a simple belief in the three persons of the Godhead, is not one of them. But if you attempt to frame the teaching of the Godhead in human ideas, and exalt human speculations, then you are definitely on the path to Rome’s spirit, even if you disagree with her particular doctrines.

It goes both ways. To add human speculations to what God has revealed of himself entangles us in the web of self-exaltation. But likewise, to take away from what God has revealed of himself also entangles us in the web of self-exaltation. The warning in *Revelation* also applies to the topic of the Godhead:

### **Revelation 22**

<sup>18</sup> For I testify unto every man that hears the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book:

<sup>19</sup> And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

Any removal from Christ of what is rightfully His, is “taking away from the words of the book,” that is, from the Scriptures of truth.

### **Speculations About the Holy Spirit**

Once people head down the path of denying the full divinity of the Son, in order to try and make one numerical God (*i.e.* the Father alone), then they inevitably begin to deny what the Scriptures teach about the Holy Spirit, or they try to explain away the various Scriptures that pertain to His personhood and divinity.

Here again is a manifestation of “gross presumption.” Ellen White once wrote to a man who was involving himself in speculations, and then agitating his views to other church members.

Evidently these views involved some teaching about the nature of the Holy Spirit. Ellen wrote to him about how “the nature of the Holy Spirit is a mystery,” and then stated:

**Manuscript Releases, vol. 14, p. 180:**

You may take certain views of Scripture and, searching the Bible in the light of your ideas, may gather together a large number of texts and claim that they mean this and that, and call for anyone to prove to you that your views are incorrect. But what influence could anyone have upon your mind, when he takes the same scriptures and interprets and applies them differently? Both of you claim to found your views on the Bible.

It is your duty to come as near to the people as you can, and not to get as far away from them as possible, and by your interpretation make a difference that should not exist. Here is your danger, of *diverting minds from the real issues for this time*. And you are not the only one who seems to be moved with ambition in this direction. It would not be right or prudent to send you out as a worker to promulgate your peculiar ideas and thus cause division; we have plenty of this now. We want men of solid experience, who will anchor minds and not send them adrift without chart or compass.

### **Problems With a Limited View of Christ**

If men, in their zeal to separate from the Catholic apostasy, go too far, and deny Christ's divinity, they should realize that there are some implications that spring from the idea of Christ being a created “god,” which war against the gospel. The first of these implications concerns the law of God.

#### **1. THE LAW OF GOD IS EQUAL TO GOD**

Ellen White describes the situation:

**Patriarchs and Prophets, p. 63:**

The broken law of God demanded the life of the sinner. In all the universe there was but one who could, in behalf of man, satisfy its claims. Since *the divine law is as sacred as God himself, only one equal with God could make atonement for its transgres-*

*sion*. None but Christ could redeem fallen man from the curse of the law and bring him again into harmony with Heaven.

If the divine Law is as sacred as God, then only one equally sacred with God could atone for its transgression. This in itself proves the divinity of Christ's life. Christ's death made atonement for the transgression of the Law. If Christ's divine life was in some way created or derived, then it follows that the Law of God was also created or derived, for a lesser cannot atone for a greater.

As well, if Christ's divine life was created, then God could create another. And if another Christ could be created, then the law of God could be discarded and another be created also. But the Law is as unchangeable as God himself. It's not possible to make another; nor is it possible to make another "only begotten Son."

## **2. GOD'S LOVE IS REVEALED IN THE GIFT OF CHRIST**

The sacrifice of Christ is the great revelation of the love of God.

### **John 3**

<sup>16</sup> For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life.

If Christ was equal to the Father, with respect to His divine life, then this was a great sacrifice indeed, the sacrifice of God's life for the sins of man.

But if Christ was created or derived, if His divine life had a beginning, then God could make another. In that case, the sacrifice was not such a great revelation of God's love. If this were true, then God did not give himself in Christ, He just gave one of His created works; the most prized one perhaps, but still only a created work. This would make the offering of Christ to be a sacrifice of infinitely less value, and hence would not be a real revelation of the unmeasurable depth of God's love.

## Holding to Revealed Truth

I will close with a recommendation. The answer to this controversy is to stick close to what God has revealed. As Ellen White recommended to the man who was agitating unusual views about the Holy Spirit:

Here is your danger, of diverting minds from the real issues for this time.

God has given us messages, which we are to apply to our lives, and then teach them to the people. Satan would love to distract us into “new light” which is not light at all, but just old Arian darkness. As long as he can keep us distracted from concentrating on the present truth, then the work of God is delayed, and our own spiritual development and eternal reward are imperiled.

The early church got distracted into arguing about the Godhead, and making creedal statements to persecute each other with. The Protestant churches got bogged down in hair-splitting theological arguments<sup>17</sup> instead of concentrating on practical reforms. None of these things that they spent so much time on were ordained of God.

We respect the pioneers for building on the foundation that God had given, and putting their talents behind that message. This foundation that they built upon, is what we build on today. We benefit by the work that they have done before us. But when they deviated from that work, and thought themselves competent to argue over issues that God had not made a priority, then they erred from building on the foundation, and we should not follow their example.

As I mentioned before, the word “trinity” does not even occur in any of the writings of Ellen White. That silence indicates how God looks upon the matter, and how much time He wants us to spend on it.

---

<sup>17</sup> See the booklet, *Historical Necessity of the Third Angel's Message*, by A. T. Jones.

Instead, God has given us great light upon other topics. In the early advent movement, it was light on the near-coming judgment, which time we are in right now. He gave us light to show that the work of Christ would soon be finished in the sanctuary, and that those of us who lived through the final days of earth's history would have to be cleansed from all sin, living in the sight of a holy God without a mediator, when the work in the heavenly sanctuary was closed.

We have learned that God's earthly children, who live to see Christ's return, are to give such a revelation of God's character as has not been seen since the cross, and this revelation will bring down the kingdom of Satan.<sup>18</sup> But for that revelation to be given, we need to first know God, and seeking after this knowledge will take all of our effort. Only those who diligently seek, will find.<sup>19</sup>

When the early Adventists fell into the Laodicean condition, and lost sight of the gospel, (which is the power of God whereby they could be made obedient,) God gave them the 1888 message. This exalted the sin-pardoning Redeemer, and should have fixed their eyes on His all-sufficiency, and laid man's glory into the dust.

When that message was lost, God re-agitated it in the 1950's and 60's, through men like Wieland and Short, and especially through the Brinsmead Awakening, which led to the ministry of Fred Wright. Not only was the past light of the 1888 message illuminated, but further light was given, and error was exposed and separated from the truth, so that the truth could shine more clearly.

---

<sup>18</sup> In prophecy, the last half of *Revelation* 14 describes this work. It is more clearly explained in the book, *The Seven Angels*. Ellen White also describes the experience of the last generation in chapters 39 and 40 of *The Great Controversy*.

<sup>19</sup> *Matthew* 7:7.

## Christ as Connector

Through this revival of the 1888 message, we have learned to look at the divine arrangement in this way<sup>20</sup>:

1. The Father is the Source.
2. The Son is the Connector who joins the Father's power to the created beings.
3. The Spirit is the one who administers these blessings in all places simultaneously.

In order for Christ to be the Connector, He had to possess the life of both parties: the divine life, so He can unite with the Father; and the created life, so He can unite with the created beings. In the vision given to Jacob,<sup>21</sup> Christ was represented by a ladder. We have often read that this ladder must reach all the way to the Earth, touching our fallen human nature, in order to join us to God. And so Christ came in "the likeness of sinful flesh,"<sup>22</sup> and not in the sinless human nature of Adam before the fall.

### **The Desire of Ages, p. 311-312:**

Christ is the ladder that Jacob saw, the base resting on the earth, and the topmost round reaching to the gate of heaven, to the very threshold of glory. If that ladder had failed by a single step of reaching the earth, we should have been lost. But Christ reaches us where we are. He took our nature and overcame, that we through taking His nature might overcome. Made "in the likeness of sinful flesh" (*Romans* 8:3), He lived a sinless life. Now by His divinity He lays hold upon the throne of heaven, while by His humanity He reaches us. He bids us by faith in Him attain to the glory of the character of God. Therefore are we to be perfect, even as our "Father which is in heaven is perfect."

The ladder must not fail by one step of reaching fallen humanity; but this also means that it must not fail one step of reaching the Father. Christ must possess, on His divine side, the life of

---

<sup>20</sup> See the book, *God's Sabbath Rest*.

<sup>21</sup> *Genesis* 28.

<sup>22</sup> *Romans* 8:3.



God: original, unborrowed, underived, since immortality and eternity are the essential attributes of divinity. He offered up His humanity on the altar of His divinity, and...

### **Matthew 23**

<sup>19</sup> ...the altar...sanctifies the gift.

It was His divinity that made the sacrifice efficacious for all men. One created being cannot atone for the sins of millions; but divinity, being the source of eternal life, can do so. One created being cannot give new spiritual life to sinners who are “dead in trespasses,” but a divine being who has an everlasting stream of life in Him, can do so. Any doctrine that robs Christ of His divinity, robs Him of the power to redeem us.

Our safety is in following the path of the light, and adhering to those messages which God has given us. Agitations over the “trinity” were not part of that light, except where Christ’s nature, position, and work with respect to the great controversy, needed to be clarified.<sup>23</sup>

### **True Sabbath-keeping**

To truly keep the Sabbath means to cease from our own works. That includes ceasing from our own words, or our own messages, and concentrating on God’s messages, as given through His faithful messengers.

### **Isaiah 58**

<sup>13</sup> If you turn away your foot from the sabbath, from doing your pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honorable; and shall honor Him, not doing your own ways, nor finding your own pleasure, *nor speaking your own words:*

<sup>14</sup> Then shall you delight yourself in the Lord; and I will cause you to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed you with the heritage of Jacob your father: for the mouth of the Lord has spoken it.

---

<sup>23</sup> See the book, *The Destiny of a Movement*.

Had all been concentrating on the messages God sent, and not those that Satan wanted to distract us with, this publication need not have been released. But since the plague has gone forth, the healing balm must also be made available.

As far as I know, this book by E. H. Bickersteth is the ablest presentation of the principles of the Godhead, as revealed in the Scriptures. Only in a few spots does it bog down in theological terminology. But most of the book is easy to be understood, and consists mainly in putting the Scriptures side-by-side, so that they speak for themselves.

More insights that are not contained in this book, can be garnered from books such as, *The Living and the Dead*, and *Melchizedek*, by F. T. Wright; and from *The Consecrated Way to Christian Perfection*, by A. T. Jones. These books clarify the essential need of Christ to be both fully God, and fully man.

*Frank Zimmerman*  
*practicaprophetica.com*

# Preface

THE title-page of this Treatise may sufficiently indicate the line of argument I have attempted to pursue. My standard of reference throughout, has been the memorable precept,

## Isaiah 26

<sup>4</sup> Trust in the Lord for ever, for in the Lord Jehovah is the Rock of Ages.

That the one Infinite God claims our supreme and undivided confidence; that the same confidence is, on the warrant of Scripture, to be reposed in the Father, and in the Son, and in the Holy Ghost; and that therefore Father, Son, and Spirit are equally God over all, blessed for ever, the Triune Jehovah, in whose name alone we trust, on whose arm alone we rely, and whose majesty alone we adore and love: such is the brief outline of a train of thought indelibly impressed many years ago on my own mind.

Local circumstances, to which I allude in my opening chapter, induced me this autumn to commit these thoughts to paper. I intended to write only a brief pamphlet. But I found that proofs from the written word accumulated upon me so rapidly, that I could not duly sketch this most momentous of subjects in so cursory a way. I therefore suffered Scripture as it were to lead me by the hand: until by compiling and illustrating Bible evidence alone, my little essay swelled to nearly its present dimensions.

And when the rough draft of my manuscript was to some extent completed, I did not scruple to avail myself of the labors of those authors, to which I have from time to time referred, so far as my limited leisure permitted me to consult them. I especially allude to Dr. Pye Smith's *Scripture Testimony to the Messiah*: my readers will find how much I am indebted to that truly learned and elaborate work. I would also mention a short but valuable treatise, now out of print, by the late Mr. Serjeant Sellon; *Dwight's Theology*, vol. ii; *Wardlaw's Discourses*; *Serie's Horae Solitariae*; *Lectures at Christ Church, Liverpool*; *Scholefield's Hints*; Dr. Gor-

don's *Supreme Godhead of Christ*; and Jones' *Catholic Doctrine of a Trinity*: though to many of these authors I have only been able to refer, as isolated passages led me to desire to know their judgment on contested interpretations.

With respect to the last, Jones' *Catholic Doctrine*, which contains so much in so brief a space, I had not seen it until my Treatise was almost finished. His system of proof is in some respects similar to mine: but even my threefold comparison in the last chapter of this work, which resembles his arrangement the nearest, was commenced before the possession of his work enabled me to enrich this and two or three earlier sections likewise, with some most apposite quotations gleaned by him from the Word of God. I mention this only to show that my collection of Scriptural evidence was, in the main, independent; for in such a subject, of all others, claims of originality can have no place.

But while speaking of other writers, may I be permitted to urge any, who do not know them, to study some essays *On the Religions of Man and the Religion of God*, by the late Professor Vinet, of Lausanne?<sup>24</sup> Space alone prevented my quoting at the close of this book a large portion of his admirable remarks on the mysteries of Christianity. He is not unjustly called the Chalmers of Switzerland; for in his hands the deepest subjects bloom with life and love.

But after all, our appeal must be to *One Book*. I have honestly tried to understand the views of sincere Unitarians; but I can come to no other conclusion, than that while sometimes freely using the language of Scripture with respect to our Lord, they regard Him only as a most highly exalted and divinely endowed CREATURE. In a word, to them He is *not* God. And therefore, on their hypothesis, if men trust in Him for eternal salvation, reposing their entire confidence in Him, they are trusting in a creature,

---

<sup>24</sup> The work is called *Vital Christianity*: and is well translated by an American pastor. It is published in a very cheap form, by W. Collins, Paternoster Row, London.

which is idolatry.<sup>25</sup> Whereas if they do not so trust in Him, they are rejecting the only name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved.<sup>26</sup> From this disastrous alternative I see no possible escape.

I rejoice to think, however, they are bound down by no definite creed of error. They are, to use their own emphatic expression, “a drifting body.” O that it might please God that the movement among the American Unitarians might spread to our own land! And while they profess to draw their faith from the oracles of truth, who can despair of their being brought back to the one flock, and the one Shepherd? For,

**Psalm 19**

<sup>7</sup> The law of the Lord is perfect, converting the soul;

**Psalm 119**

<sup>130</sup> The entrance of your words gives light;

**Ephesians 6**

<sup>17</sup> ...the sword of the Spirit...is the word of God.

In the humble hope that some may be led to search anew, and to believe at last the Scriptures which testify of Jesus, these pages have been written: and utterly disclaiming all confidence in any other weapons, my one prayer is that the Divine Spirit may cast down imaginations and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, and may bring into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.<sup>27</sup>

*Christ Church Parsonage,  
Hampstead, 7<sup>th</sup> December, 1859*

---

<sup>25</sup> *Jeremiah* 17:5-8.

<sup>26</sup> *Acts* 4:12.

<sup>27</sup> *2 Corinthians* 10:5.

# 1. Preparation for the Study

**A** DEEP conviction that many who refuse to acknowledge the Godhead of our Lord Jesus Christ, have never duly examined one line of Scriptural argument which presents to my own mind the most conclusive evidence of this foundation-truth, induces me, though...

## 1 Corinthians 2

<sup>3</sup> ...in weakness and in fear and in much trembling,

–to ask their patient and prayerful perusal of this Treatise. My hesitation arises not from the least doubt of the security of the doctrine; but from consciousness how unequal I am to do justice to the proofs which establish it, from a most affectionate concern for the souls of those to whom I write, and from a deep assurance that in the rejection or cordial acceptance of this truth are bound up the issues of eternal death or eternal life.<sup>28</sup>

I am well aware that many larger and more elaborate treatises, written by far abler advocates, are within their reach: but sometimes, an essay written by a neighbor will be read with courteous interest when volumes of far deeper research are passed by. And my lot has been cast where many Unitarians<sup>29</sup> reside: their acts of kindness and benevolence are continually making themselves felt among us, and proofs are multiplied on every side of their own mental culture, and of their desire for the moral elevation of the poor.

Who that delights in things lovely and of good report<sup>30</sup> can refrain from loving their excellencies? I long over them: and yet my opportunities of intercourse are of necessity casual and limited. Hence, if it will not seem presumptuous, I know not how better to

---

<sup>28</sup> *John* 3:36; 2 *John* 9.

<sup>29</sup> I use the word “Unitarians” as the distinctive name they have assumed: but under protest, that it does not fairly set forth the points at issue between us, if for no other reason, for this, that we cleave to the Unity of God as tenaciously as they.

<sup>30</sup> *Philippians* 4:8.

account for my present Address than in the language of Paul on behalf of his kinsmen:

**Romans 10**

<sup>1</sup> Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is that they might be saved.

Another motive weighs with me—may I ask my reader's forgiveness for any personal allusion?—but I believe few can have passed through years of more incessant spiritual conflict than myself, and this long after I had embraced the Gospel with the affections of my soul. Apparent scriptural contradictions staggered me: for I found to my cost the Tempter could assail us as he assailed our Master, saying,

**Matthew 4**

<sup>6</sup> It is written.

The battle raged over the whole field of revealed truth, though chiefly around the central fact of our holy faith, the Divinity of the Son of God. The Bible was my only sword, prayer my only resource, until, through the infinite mercy of God, those very truths around which skeptical doubts had once clustered most thickly, became the strongest bulwarks to which, when assailed on other points, I used to resort.

Since that time, in the course of my ministry during the last ten years, I have had many difficulties brought before me by Unitarians and others, but scarcely ever a perplexity which had not been suggested to my own mind, and over which I had not fought oftentimes a painful fight. So that at least I can say with Virgil's heroine:

*Non ignara mali miseris succurrere disco.*<sup>31</sup>

—and I can conceive no purer joy on earth than that of being permitted to lead some other tempest-tossed spirit to that faith where I have found security and peace.

---

<sup>31</sup> "I learn to help those who are not ignorant of evil."

Those I address will at least find here no artificial fencing, for I am no trained swordsman in this controversy: but sometimes it has pleased God to overcome gigantic error, not by the skilful gladiator clad in the panoply of learning, but by a few smooth stones from the sling of a shepherd boy.

And here if any earnest student designs to give me his attention I would ask him to pause, and to pour out his heart in prayer that he may be guided into all truth. Such an inquirer feels with me, that eternal life is wrapt up in...

**John 17**

<sup>3</sup> ...the knowledge of the only true God, and of Jesus Christ, whom He has sent;

-that:

**Hebrews 11**

<sup>6</sup> ...God is, and that He is a rewarder of the man that diligently seeks Him;

-and will therefore feel no difficulty in uniting with me in such or such like petitions, every clause of which is taken from Scripture:

Almighty God, the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,<sup>32</sup> who inhabits eternity, who dwells in the high and holy place, but with him also who is of a contrite and humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the humble, and to revive the heart of the contrite ones:<sup>33</sup> grant me to understand the fear of the Lord, and to find the knowledge of God.<sup>34</sup>

I cannot by searching find out You unto perfection,<sup>35</sup> the King, eternal, immortal, invisible.<sup>36</sup> But look down from heaven, and behold from the habitation of your holiness and of your glory.<sup>37</sup>

---

<sup>32</sup> *Ephesians* 1:3.

<sup>33</sup> *Isaiah* 57:15.

<sup>34</sup> *Proverbs* 2:5.

<sup>35</sup> *Job* 11:7.

<sup>36</sup> *1 Timothy* 1:17.

<sup>37</sup> *Isaiah* 63:15.



Doubtless You are my Father.<sup>38</sup> Show mercy upon me, and be gracious unto me.<sup>39</sup> Search me, O God, and know my heart, try me and know my thoughts, and see if there be any way of grief in me, and lead me in the way everlasting.<sup>40</sup>

I plead the promise of Jesus, if you being evil, know how to give good things to your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to those that ask Him.<sup>41</sup> Hear me speedily, O Lord, hide not your face from me—your Spirit is good: lead me.<sup>42</sup> For I ask in the name of Jesus, who is able to save to the uttermost those that come unto You by Him, seeing He ever lives to make intercession for them,<sup>43</sup> and who has said, Whatsoever you shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.<sup>44</sup>

O solemn and blessed pursuit! We are seeking the Lord. Strip the words, I pray you, of every unmeaning association, and yield your whole being, understanding, heart, conscience, will, to the momentous inquiry. Let us humble ourselves with the recollection,

#### **Isaiah 45**

<sup>15</sup> Verily, You are a God that hide yourself, O God of Israel, the Saviour.

Let us encourage ourselves with the quickly succeeding assurance,

<sup>19</sup> I said not unto the seed of Jacob, Seek me in vain.

Thus though there will, there must be in the self-revelation of Him, whose ways are past finding out, mysteries beyond the reach and range of our finite capacities, all necessary and saving knowledge is promised to the humble student; for the words of

---

<sup>38</sup> *Isaiah* 63:15-16.

<sup>39</sup> *Exodus* 33:19.

<sup>40</sup> *Psalm* 139:23-24, see margin.

<sup>41</sup> *Luke* 11:13.

<sup>42</sup> *Psalm* 143:7, 10.

<sup>43</sup> *Hebrews* 7:25.

<sup>44</sup> *John* 14:13.

the Psalmist have lost nothing of their significance by the lapse of time,

**Psalm 138**

<sup>6</sup> Though the Lord be high, yet has He respect unto the lowly,  
but the proud He knows afar off,

–and again,

**Psalm 34**

<sup>18</sup> The Lord is nigh unto them that are of a broken heart, and  
saves such as be of a contrite spirit.

These words point to a preparation of the heart. I ask not then, my friends, that you should inquire first of all into the nature of God's mysterious Being, the Divinity of Jesus Christ, and the personality of the Holy Spirit. There is a prior investigation which demands your earnest heed, and which pursued with prayerful study of the word of God, will by His grace awaken and cultivate that disposition of mind which is fitted for the after inquiry.

Starting from those truths you acknowledge, What, I ask, is your relation to God, what your position before Him as recorded in Scripture? You admit that God is the Supreme Creator and Father, and Governor, and Judge of all men. You confess that He is infinitely holy, and just, and good. You acknowledge that He is himself perfect love, and must of necessity require the perfect love of His creatures for the sake of His own glory and of their happiness. That grand epitome of His righteous code of government commends itself to your inmost conscience,

**Matthew 22**

<sup>37</sup> You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with  
all your soul, and with all your strength:

<sup>39</sup> ...and you shall love your brother as yourself.

If you look higher than man to the pure intelligences around the throne of glory, you can conceive no other law binding together the perfect society of heaven. It is the utterance of the mind of the blessed God.

But now, looking abroad as a practical and thoughtful man upon the world as it is, what meets your eye? selfishness, misery, discord, enmity, rebellion; in one word, sin. Some sights of woe move you to compassionate tears, and your heart is wrung for the calamities of human kind; some deeds of rapine excite in you a righteous indignation, and you exclaim,

“Such atrocities worthily deserve to be punished!”

You are pitiful and you are just. But remember your sense of pity and of equity is only a faint reflection from that in the bosom of the infinite Jehovah. His compassions fail not.<sup>45</sup> His righteousness is everlasting.<sup>46</sup> He is Father, and Legislator, and Judge in one. Sin violates every obligation: it wounds the heart of the eternal Father. Listen to His pathetic appeal,

**Isaiah 1**

<sup>2</sup> Hear, O heavens, and give ear O earth, for the Lord has spoken: I have nourished and brought up children and they have rebelled against me.

It sets at nought the wise regulations of the Lawgiver. He complains,

**Ezekiel 20**

<sup>11</sup> I gave them my statutes, and shewed them my judgments, which if a man do he shall even live in them.

<sup>21</sup> Notwithstanding the children rebelled against me, they walked not in my statutes, neither kept my judgments to do them.

It is provoking the judicial condemnation of Him who now expostulates,

**Romans 2**

<sup>4</sup> Know you not that the goodness of God leads you to repentance?

---

<sup>45</sup> *Lamentations* 3:22.

<sup>46</sup> *Psalms* 119:122.

<sup>5</sup> But after your hardness and impenitent heart treasure up unto yourself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God;

<sup>6</sup> Who will render to every man according to his deeds.

To inquire then what is the nature of sin, its character, course, and issue, is only the part of a rational, intelligent being. But herein, especially, it behooves us to lay aside all prejudice and pride, to remember how distasteful all revelations of our own corruptions must be to the natural heart, and to reflect that the plague, the diagnosis of which we would learn, itself impairs our perceptive faculties.

Here then, let us humble ourselves as a little child.<sup>47</sup> Here, as we open the sure word of God, let us answer with Samuel of old,

### **1 Samuel 3**

<sup>9</sup> Speak, Lord, for your servant hears.

And here, if the probe cut deep, let us be assured,

### **Proverbs 27**

<sup>6</sup> Faithful are the wounds of a friend,

–and loving is the correction of a Father who smites that he may heal<sup>48</sup> and...

### **Isaiah 61**

<sup>1</sup> ...bind up the broken in heart.

This evil of sin is not superficial, but radical. It pervades human life from the cradle to the grave.

### **Psalms 51**

<sup>5</sup> Behold, I was shapen in iniquity and in sin did my mother conceive me.

### **Proverbs 24**

<sup>9</sup> The thought of foolishness is sin.

---

<sup>47</sup> *Matthew* 18:3-4.

<sup>48</sup> *Isaiah* 19:22.

## **Proverbs 22**

<sup>15</sup> Foolishness is bound up in the heart of a child.

## **Genesis 8**

<sup>21</sup> The imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth.

## **Jeremiah 17**

<sup>9</sup> The heart is deceitful above all things and desperately wicked.

## **Mark 7**

<sup>21</sup> From within, out of the heart, proceed evil thoughts...

<sup>23</sup> All these evil things come from within and defile the man.

This evil is not partial, but universal. None have escaped from it.

## **Ecclesiastes 7**

<sup>20</sup> There is not a just man upon earth that does good and sins not.

## **Romans 3**

<sup>10</sup> There is none righteous, no not one.

<sup>19</sup> All the world becomes guilty before God.

<sup>23</sup> All have sinned and come short of the glory of God.

This evil is not self-remedial; but so far as lies in man, incurable.<sup>49</sup>

## **Job 14**

<sup>4</sup> Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? Not one.

## **Job 25**

<sup>4</sup> How then can man be justified with God? or how can he be clean that is born of a woman?

## **Jeremiah 13**

<sup>23</sup> Can the Ethiopian change his skin, or the leopard his spots?

Then may you also do good, that are accustomed to do evil.

This evil is fatal.

---

<sup>49</sup> *Jeremiah 30:12.*

## **Genesis 2**

<sup>17</sup> In the day you eat thereof, dying you shall die,

–was the warning of faithful love to Adam, and upon the fall moral and spiritual death marched like a pestilence through man’s noble soul. The land was as the garden of Eden before it, and behind it a desolate wilderness.<sup>50</sup> Hence disease and decay, those symbols of a deeper malady.

## **James 1**

<sup>15</sup> And sin when it is finished brings forth death.

## **Romans 5**

<sup>12</sup> Death passes upon all men, for that all have sinned.

And to those who die in their sins, this death of the body is the awful introduction of that...

## **Revelation 20**

<sup>14</sup> ...second death, [when]

<sup>15</sup> Whosoever not found written in the book of life is cast into the lake of fire.

Let us then return to the question,

“What is our own position by nature before God?”

(O merciful Father, teach me who write and those who read these lines to know ourselves!)

- Does not that law of perfect love condemn us?
- Does it not bring us in guilty before Him whose eyes are as a flame of fire?
- Have we not rebelled against the majesty of Jehovah?
- Have we not deeply wounded the paternal heart of Him who is infinite love?

Alas, we have not escaped this universal corruption. We are convicts, self-condemned. We are sinners. Oh, to realize the true meaning of the word! When a man sins against his fellow, a child

---

<sup>50</sup> *Joel 2:3.*

against his parent, a servant against his master, we appreciate the guilt. But who shall estimate the ingratitude of sin against God? All other facts are trivial compared with this—we are sinners—for sin uncleansed and unchecked is present defilement and final death.

Such is our position: a humiliating one in truth to the awakened conscience:

- Guilty, and therefore craving pardon;
- Weak, and therefore casting about for help;
- In darkness, and therefore crying out for light.

### **Acts 16**

<sup>30</sup> What must I do to be saved?

Until this is answered, every other question is a grand impertinence—saved from sin, its guilt, its power, its issue?

### **John 6**

<sup>68</sup> Lord, to whom shall we go?

The cry pierces heaven, and reaches the throne of the Eternal.

<sup>68</sup> Lord, to whom shall we go?

—and the response is given in the lively oracles of truth:

### **Isaiah 45**

<sup>21</sup> There is no God else beside me, a just God and a Saviour, there is none beside me.

<sup>22</sup> Look unto me and be saved all the ends of the earth, for I am God and there is none else.

## 2. Trust in God, the Creator

**A**ND this brings me to the first great proposition I would establish:

*That Scripture, in the Old and the New Testament alike, detaches our ultimate confidence from man, the creature, and attaches it to God, the Creator.*

This is enforced by three parallel lines of truth:

4. By contrasting the sinfulness and feebleness of mortal man with the goodness and omnipotence of the Eternal Jehovah;
5. By direct prohibition and precept;
6. By declaration of the awful jealousy of the Creator if any creature usurp His position in our affiance and in our regard.

### 1. Contrast Between Man and God

The most casual glance at the contrast testimony of Scripture might convince us that such is the design of God.

	<b>Scripture Testimony of Man</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony of God</b>
<b>1</b>	We are but of yesterday And know nothing  Because our days upon earth are a shadow. <i>Job 8:9</i>	You are from everlasting. <i>Psalms 93:2</i> All things naked to His eyes. <i>Hebrews 4:13</i>  He inhabits eternity. <i>Isaiah 57:15</i>
<b>2</b>	You are not able to do that thing which is least. <i>Luke 12:26</i>	With God all things are possible. <i>Matthew 19:26</i>
<b>3</b>	You are upon earth. <i>Ecclesiastes 5:2</i>	God is in heaven. <i>Ecclesiastes 5:2</i>
<b>4</b>	We that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened. <i>2 Corinthians 5:4</i>  Them that dwell in houses of	He stretches out the heavens as a curtain, and spreads them out as a tent to dwell in. <i>Isaiah 40:22</i>  The heaven of heavens cannot con-



	<b>Scripture Testimony of Man</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony of God</b>
	clay, Whose foundation is in the dust, Which are crushed before the moth. <i>Job 4:19</i>	tain You. <i>1 Kings 8:27</i> God is a Spirit. <i>John 4:24</i> The Lord God omnipotent. <i>Revelation 19:6</i>
5	The thoughts of man—are van- ity. <i>Psalm 94:11</i> Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom. <i>Jeremiah 9:23</i> He turns wise men backward and makes their knowledge fool- ish. <i>Isaiah 44:25</i>	The counsel of Jehovah stands for ever, And the thoughts of His heart to all generations. <i>Psalm 33:11</i> The immutability of His counsel. <i>Hebrews 6:17</i>
6	All flesh is grass, and all The goodness thereof as the flower of the field. <i>Isaiah 40:6</i>	The eternal God. <i>Deuteronomy 33:27</i> The glory of Jehovah shall endure forever. <i>Psalm 104:31</i>
7	There is none righteous, no, not one. <i>Romans 3:10</i>	There is none holy as Jehovah. <i>1 Samuel 2:2</i> There is none good but one, that is God. <i>Matthew 19:17</i>
8	The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked, Who can know it? <i>Jeremiah 17:9</i> Man looks on the outward ap- pearance. <i>1 Samuel 16:7</i>	God is light and in Him is no dark- ness at all. <i>1 John 1:5</i> I the Lord search the heart. <i>Jeremiah 17:10</i> But the Lord looks at the heart. <i>1 Samuel 16:7</i>
9	A man that shall die. <i>Isaiah 51:12</i>	Who only has immortality. <i>1 Timothy 6:16</i>
10	In Him we live and move and have our being. <i>Acts 17:28</i>	The Father has life in himself. <i>John 5:26</i>
11	Woe to him that strives with his Maker! Shall the clay say to Him that fashions it, What do You make? <i>Isaiah 45:9</i>	I have made the earth and created man upon it. <i>Isaiah 45:12</i> He fashions the hearts (of the sons of men) alike. <i>Psalm 33:15</i>
12	O Israel, you have destroyed yourself. <i>Hosea 13:9</i>	But in me is your help. <i>Hosea 13:9</i>

This testimony might be almost indefinitely prolonged; the above may suffice. But I would venture to draw your attention to three or four passages, where the contrast is forced upon our notice by the sacred writer himself.

If, for example, we turn to the prayer of Moses, he reposes supreme trust in the Eternal:

**Psalm 90**

<sup>1</sup> Lord, You have been our dwelling place for all generations.

<sup>2</sup> Before the mountains were brought forth or ever you had formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, you are God,

—and contrasts this immutability of the Most High with the brief life of men:

<sup>5</sup> They are as a sleep: in the morning they are like grass which grows up.

<sup>6</sup> In the morning it flourishes, and grows up; in the evening it is cut down and withers.<sup>51</sup>

This was the lesson so often and so painfully taught Israel of old, by a Father's solemn chastisements and forgiving love. From frequent expostulations I select one:

**Isaiah 31**

<sup>1</sup> Woe to them that go down to Egypt for help, and stay on horses, and trust in chariots, because they are many, and in horsemen because they are very strong, but they look not unto the Holy One of Israel, neither seek the Lord.

And what is the reason given?

<sup>3</sup> Now the Egyptians are men and not God, and their horses flesh, and not Spirit.

And what is the urgent entreaty founded thereon?

---

<sup>51</sup> I would pray the reader to compare the way in which this same figure, this parable to all nations, is enlarged upon, *Isaiah* 40:6-8, and is enforced in the New Testament, *1 Peter* 1:24; *James* 1:10.

### **Isaiah 31**

<sup>6</sup> Turn unto Him, from whom the children of Israel have deeply revolted.

Again, this message is sent to captive Zion:

### **Isaiah 51**

<sup>12</sup> I, even I am He that comforts you. Who are you, that you should be afraid of a man that shall die, and of the son of man which shall be made as grass;

<sup>13</sup> And forget the Lord your Maker that has stretched forth the heavens and laid the foundations of the earth.

<sup>15</sup> But I am the Lord your God, that divided the sea, whose waves roared: The Lord of hosts is His name.

Observe, in all these passages, how much stress is laid on the creative power of God as proof of His infinite pre-eminence. The Maker alone is mighty to save. And if it be so in temporal deliverances, how much more in respect of that eternal salvation which must engross the regards of every thoughtful man, seeing that the Psalmist says of the rich men of earth,

### **Psalm 49**

<sup>7</sup> None can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him:

<sup>8</sup> For the redemption of their soul is precious.

<sup>15</sup> But God,...

—as he shortly after cries in the rebounding exultation of faith,

<sup>15</sup> ...God will redeem my soul from the power of the grave, for He shall receive me.

## **2. Prohibitions and Precepts**

Furthermore, the prohibitions and precepts are direct and express.

### **Psalm 146**

<sup>3</sup> Put not your trust in princes nor in the son of man in whom there is no help.

<sup>4</sup> His breath goes forth, he returns to his earth, in that very day his thoughts perish.

<sup>5</sup> Happy is he that has the God of Jacob for his help, and whose hope is in the Lord his God:

<sup>6</sup> Which made heaven and earth, the sea and all that therein is, who keeps truth forever.

So again, Isaiah having spoken of the fear of the Lord, and of the glory of His Majesty, says:

### **Isaiah 2**

<sup>22</sup> Cease from man, whose breath is in his nostrils, for wherein is he to be accounted of?

I need not multiply passages to prove that the explicit commands of Scripture with one consentient voice require in the words of Peter, that our...

### **1 Peter 1**

<sup>21</sup> ...faith and hope be in God.

## **3. Jealousy of the Creator**

But nothing can prove this fundamental truth more solemnly than the words heard by Moses on Sinai,

### **Exodus 34**

<sup>14</sup> You shall worship no other God. For the Lord, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God.

Jealousy, as usually understood, is that peculiar uneasiness which arises from the fear that another may rob us of our due honor or affection. And with fallen man towards his fallen fellows this attribute of our being, from taking an exaggerated view of our own rights and claims, from unduly depreciating those of others, and frequently from unjustly suspecting their innocent conduct, becomes the readiest vent for the outflowings of selfishness. And hence the ill name of jealousy.

But not always even among men. Thus we speak of a man, jealous for the fair name and best interests of his friend; as Paul says of the Corinthians,

## **2 Corinthians 11**

<sup>2</sup> I am jealous over you with Godly jealousy.

And thus a man may be justly jealous of his own reputation, that...

## **Proverbs 22**

<sup>1</sup> ...good name which is rather to be chosen than great riches.

In this use it is closely allied to self-respect, and springs from a due sense of our own position and powers, of the claims which we have upon others, and of those mutual obligations, domestic, social, national, which lie upon us all.

Now, in a sinless world, this estimate would be exactly true, and these requirements every moment perfectly satisfied. But when sin breaks in, the claims of man on man are violated: and justice of necessity conceives a holy anger and a pure indignation at that which is unjust and unequal.

We see a broken fragmentary image of it in man, like the sun struggling through mist, and reflected on agitated waters. But in God it is without fault, or flaw, or cloud. He has an absolutely perfect knowledge of His own supreme majesty and goodness: He forms an absolutely perfect estimate of the claims that supremacy has on His creatures: and He conceives an absolutely perfect jealousy when those obligations are set at nought.

Now, the Lord declares himself to be Self-Existent from eternity, Omnipresent, Immutable, Almighty, Incomprehensible, Omniscient, the Good One, the Holy One, the Creator, Preserver, and Administrator of all things in heaven and earth, the Searcher of hearts, and the Most High Judge of all.

These attributes, indeed, would appertain to Him as governing a world which sin had never defiled, and sorrow never darkened, and death never desolated. But when man had broken His commands, and trodden the seductive paths of disobedience and guilt, the Lord gives a farther and deeper revelation of His Divine goodness and grace. He reveals himself as the Alone Being who for-

gives iniquity, transgression, and sin, as the Alone Refuge for the fugitive, as the Alone Saviour, Deliverer, and Redeemer of His people.

Further, He claims the supreme dependence, love, worship, and service of His creatures.<sup>52</sup> This you would not for a moment deny, so that you could without scruple subscribe to the language of the Church of England,

My duty to God is to believe in Him, to fear Him, and to love Him with all my heart, with all my mind, with all my soul, and with all my strength; to worship Him, to give Him thanks, to put my whole trust in Him; to call upon Him, to honor His holy name and His word, and to serve Him truly all the days of my life.<sup>53</sup>

But how does He regard it if any creature usurp His rightful prerogatives and steal away the homage of our hearts from Him who says,

**Isaiah 42**

<sup>8</sup> I am Jehovah; that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another.

Let me answer in the language of Scripture:

**Jeremiah 17**

<sup>5</sup> Thus says the Lord, Cursed be the man that trusts in man, and makes flesh his arm, and whose heart departs from the Lord.

<sup>6</sup> For he shall be like the heath in the desert, and shall not see when good comes; but shall inhabit the parched places in the wilderness, in a salt land and not inhabited.

<sup>7</sup> Blessed is the man that trusts in the Lord, and whose hope the Lord is.

<sup>8</sup> For he shall be as a tree planted by the waters, and that spreads out her roots by the river, and shall not see when heat comes, but her leaf shall be green; and shall not be careful in the year of drought, neither shall cease from yielding fruit.

---

<sup>52</sup> *Isaiah 26:4; Deuteronomy 6:4-5; 10:20-21; 5:29.*

<sup>53</sup> Church Catechism.

It is impossible in a brief treatise to exhibit the strength of this declaration. These verses do not stand isolated from the rest of Scripture. They only gather up and present to us, in a few words, its concurrent testimony from *Genesis* to *Revelation*.

*(O Lord, cleanse the thoughts of our hearts from all creature confidence, by the inspiration of your Holy Spirit, that we may perfectly love You, and worthily magnify your Holy Name!)*

For this truth stands on the fore-front of the temple of Religion:

**Isaiah 46**

<sup>9</sup> I am God, and there is none else.

The dedication stone bears this golden inscription:

“To the Alone Supreme, Eternal Jehovah.”

And as you bow low within its holy precincts, this is the first and great commandment:

**Exodus 20**

<sup>3</sup> You shall have none other gods but me.

And the response of every faithful worshipper is in the spirit of the Levitical adoration:

**Nehemiah 9**

<sup>5</sup> O Lord our God, blessed be your glorious name, which is exalted above all blessing and praise.

<sup>6</sup> You, even you, are Lord alone: you have made heaven, the heaven of heavens, with all their host, the earth, and all things that are therein, the seas, and all that is therein, and you preserve them all; and the host of heaven worships You.

<sup>7</sup> You are the Lord.

Such adoration as is re-echoed in the courts of heavenly glory:

**Revelation 4**

<sup>11</sup> You are worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honor and power; for you have created all things, and for your pleasure they are, and were created.

### 3. Trust in the Lord Jesus Christ

I WOULD proceed then to my second proposition:

*That Scripture, in the Old and New Testament alike,  
requires us to repose our ultimate confidence  
in the Lord Jesus Christ.*

Or in other words, I maintain that Scripture brings before us One mysterious Person, the Son of God, the Son of man, in wondrous union with the Father, but of distinct personality from the Father, to whom all these Divine attributes are ascribed, and who claims and receives, without protest, yea, as His just and inalienable right: equal trust, adoration, love, and service, with Him who says,

**Isaiah 42**

<sup>8</sup> I am Jehovah,

**Exodus 34**

<sup>14</sup> My name is Jealous,

–and,

**Isaiah 42**

<sup>8</sup> My glory will I not give to another.

That the personality of the Father and the Son is distinct, and that they are neither to be identified nor confounded, is so self-evident a truth, and is so seldom denied by those to whom I write, that two or three Scripture proofs will abundantly suffice.

At His baptism and transfiguration the voice of the Father was heard saying of Him,

**Matthew 3**

<sup>17</sup> This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.<sup>54</sup>

Jesus addresses His Father in prayer. Jesus says,

---

<sup>54</sup> Also *Matthew* 17:5.



### **John 8**

<sup>17</sup> It is written in your law, The testimony of two men is true.

<sup>18</sup> I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me bears witness of me:

–and further, which is incontrovertible evidence—for the will is the essence of personality:

### **John 6**

<sup>38</sup> I came down from heaven not to do my own will, but the will of Him that sent me.

But the tenets of Noëtus and Sabellius, who denied this truth, are so rarely affirmed by Unitarians, that with this brief notice I may at once proceed to bring scriptural testimony of all Divine attributes being predicated of the Son.

### **Is the Father Eternal?**

Bethlehem was the predicted birthplace into our world of One...

### **Micah 5**

<sup>2</sup> ...whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting.

### **John 1**

<sup>14</sup> The Word [who] was made flesh and dwelt among us,

<sup>2</sup> ...was in the beginning with God:

–and himself assumes the incommunicable co-eternal Name,

### **John 8**

<sup>59</sup> ...I AM.

And He who appeared in vision to John in Patmos,

### **Revelation 1**

<sup>13</sup> ...like unto the Son of man,

–declares,

<sup>8</sup> I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

<sup>17</sup> I am the first and the last.<sup>55</sup>

<sup>18</sup> I am He that lives and was dead; and, behold, I am alive forevermore.<sup>56</sup>

## Is the Father Omnipresent?

Jesus says,

### **Matthew 18**

<sup>20</sup> Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

“‘There I am,’ not ‘There I will be,’ referring to His Divine presence at all times. Two or three of His people (says Scott) may be thus met together in ten thousand places all over the earth at the same time, this must therefore be allowed to be a direct assertion of his omnipresent Deity. Again, ‘Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.’ Is not this a positive declaration that He is with the apostles and succeeding ministers always unto the end of the world? But who can be so in all the separate and distinct regions in which they preached and do preach, except that Divine Being who fills all things, that Divine Essence which occupies all space, that God who is a Spirit.<sup>57</sup>

---

<sup>55</sup> “The strongest assertion that eternity past and to come belongs to himself.” Dwight. Compare *Isaiah* 48:12.

<sup>56</sup> See also *Revelation* 2:8.

<sup>57</sup> Sellon’s *Treatise on the Deity of Christ*, p. 22. The Unitarian suggestion that “the end of the world” signifies the end of the Jewish age, while it does not disprove the above argument, for such unfailing presence of a mere man with his apostles in their wide-spread evangelistic labors was as impossible for forty years as for eighteen centuries, is negated by the only other instances of Matthew’s use of this phrase, ch. 13:39, 40, 49, where it plainly indicates the final day of judgment: and ch. 24:3, where a careful consideration of the twofold question of the disciples, founded on the twofold declaration ch. 23:38, 39, and of the twofold answer it receives, proves that the end of the world respects the second advent of Christ in glory. The further suggestion that the promise, “Lo, I am with you always,” was fulfilled to Paul and others by the invisible bodily presence of Christ is refuted by Peter, who says of Him, “Whom the heaven must receive until the times of the restitution of all things” *Acts* 3:21, and by Christ himself, who says, “And now I am no more in the world” *John* 17:11. See Dwight on this passage.

## Is the Father Immutable?

### Hebrews 13

<sup>8</sup> Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever,

–and,

### Hebrews 1

<sup>8</sup> Unto the Son He says,...

<sup>10</sup> You, Lord,...

<sup>12</sup> ...are the same, and your years shall not fail.

## Is the Father Almighty?

Creation demands omnipotence:

### John 1

<sup>3</sup> All things were made by Him.

The sustentation of all things demands omnipotence:

### Colossians 1

<sup>17</sup> By Him all things consist.

Universal government demands omnipotence:

### Matthew 28

<sup>18</sup> All authority in heaven and earth is given unto Him.

Coextensive operation with God the Father in a boundless empire demands omnipotence, and Jesus Christ, when explaining His words,

### John 5

<sup>17</sup> My Father works hitherto, and I work,

–declares,

<sup>19</sup> What things soever He [the Father] does, these also does the Son likewise.

And a careful comparison of *Revelation* 1:8, with verses 13, 17, ch. 2:8; 22:13, need, as it seems to me, leave no doubt upon our mind that the Son of man declares of himself,

## **Revelation 1**

<sup>8</sup> I am...the Almighty.

### **Is the Father Incomprehensible and All-Knowing?**

Peter said to our Lord absolutely, without qualification, and with reference to that prerogative of omniscience, heart-knowledge,

#### **John 21**

<sup>17</sup> Lord, You know all things.

And Christ Jesus says of himself,

#### **Matthew 11**

<sup>27</sup> No man knows the Son but the Father, neither knows any man the Father save the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal Him.

In this passage both the omniscience and incomprehensibility of Christ are declared by himself. He who knows the Father is omniscient; He who is known only by the Father is incomprehensible.<sup>58</sup>

Also, He says,

#### **John 10**

<sup>15</sup> As the Father knows me, even so know I the Father.

The riches of Christ are declared to be unsearchable:

#### **Ephesians 3**

<sup>8</sup> ...the unsearchable riches of Christ.

His love passes knowledge:

<sup>19</sup> ...the love of Christ, which passes knowledge.

And,

#### **Colossians 2**

<sup>3</sup> In [Him] are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

---

<sup>58</sup> Dwight, vol. ii, p. 77.

## Is the Father Infinitely Good and Holy?

So that...

### **Matthew 19**

<sup>17</sup> There is none good but one, that is God,

–and again,

### **1 Samuel 2**

<sup>2</sup> There is none holy, save Jehovah.

Jesus says,

### **John 10**

<sup>11</sup> I am the Good Shepherd,

–the absolutely good one. Jesus is called,

### **Acts 3**

<sup>14</sup> ...the Holy One and the Just,

–the one...

### **2 Corinthians 5**

<sup>21</sup> ...who knew no sin:

### **Hebrews 4**

<sup>15</sup> ...without sin,

### **1 Peter 1**

<sup>19</sup> ...without spot,<sup>59</sup>

### **Hebrews 7**

<sup>26</sup> ...holy, harmless, undefiled;

### **1 John 2**

<sup>1</sup> ...Jesus Christ the righteous,

### **1 John 3**

<sup>5</sup> ...in whom is no sin,

### **John 1**

<sup>14</sup> ...full of grace and truth.

---

<sup>59</sup> Also *Hebrews* 9:14.

## Is the Father the Creator, Preserver, and Governor?

Jesus is the Creator, for:

### **Colossians 1**

<sup>16</sup> By Him [the Son of His love] were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by Him, and for Him.

### **John 1**

<sup>3</sup> All things were made by Him; and without Him [the Word] was not even one thing made that has been made.

Jesus Christ is the Preserver: for He, the Son,

### **Hebrews 1**

<sup>3</sup> ...upholds all things by the word of His power.

### **John 1**

<sup>4</sup> In Him was life; and the life was the light of men.

And,

### **John 14**

<sup>19</sup> ...because I live, [He says,] you shall live also.

Jesus is the supreme Governor: for...

### **Hebrews 1**

<sup>8</sup> ...to the Son He said, Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever.

### **Romans 9**

<sup>5</sup> [He] is over all, God blessed for ever.

### **Revelation 19**

<sup>16</sup> He [is] King of kings and Lord of lords.

### **Daniel 7**

<sup>14</sup> And...His dominion is an everlasting dominion which shall not pass away, and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.<sup>60</sup>

---

<sup>60</sup> See also *Luke* 1:33.

## Is the Father the Searcher of Hearts?

### Revelation 2

<sup>18</sup> These things says the Son of God...

<sup>23</sup> ...all the churches shall know that I am He which searches the reins and hearts;

—and He, writes John,

### John 2

<sup>24</sup> ...knew all and men,

<sup>25</sup> And needed not that any should testify of man: for He knew what was in man.

## Is the Father the Most High Judge of All?

Jesus Christ likewise stands forth as the appointed Judge of all men. For it is written,

### 2 Corinthians 5

<sup>10</sup> We must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ.

And,

### Matthew 25

<sup>31</sup> When the Son of Man shall come in His glory, and all the holy angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the throne of His glory:

<sup>32</sup> And before Him shall be gathered all nations, and He shall separate them one from another.

Here then we have all<sup>61</sup> the essential attributes of Godhead ascribed to Christ: and this, not in one or two obscure passages, but by a general consensus of those...

### 2 Peter 1

<sup>21</sup> ...holy men [who] spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

---

<sup>61</sup> The only attribute ascribed to the Father, and not ascribed to Christ in Scripture is, so far as I am aware, “Invisible.” But having proved that in His Divine nature He is incomprehensible, the reason of this is manifest from the character He sustains as the medium of communication between the Creator and the creatures of His hand.

Many other proof texts of similar character, if space had permitted, might have been brought forward. But these suffice. What do you who are seeking the Lord learn from them of your relation to Jesus Christ? He stands forth:

- before you, who are but of yesterday, as himself from everlasting:<sup>62</sup>
- before you, whose life is a vapor, as having life in himself:<sup>63</sup>
- before you, who are tied to a narrow spot of earth, as Omnipresent:<sup>64</sup>
- before you, a mutable man, as unchangeably the same:<sup>65</sup>
- before you, who without Him can do nothing, as Almighty:<sup>66</sup>
- before you, who are not sufficient to think anything of yourself, as the Omniscient One whose riches are unsearchable:<sup>67</sup>
- before you, frail and defective, as the Holy and the Just One without sin:<sup>68</sup>
- before you, a creature of the dust, as your Creator:<sup>69</sup>
- before you, whose goodness is as the flower of the field, as your Preserver:<sup>70</sup> and
- before you, who confess your feebleness in self-government, your short-sightedness in self-knowledge, and your reliance on a court of final appeal, as the Ruler of all things, the Searcher of all hearts, and the Judge of all men.<sup>71</sup>

---

<sup>62</sup> *Job 8:9; Psalm 93:2.*

<sup>63</sup> *James 4:14; John 5:26.*

<sup>64</sup> *Acts 17:26; Matthew 28:20.*

<sup>65</sup> *Hebrews 13:8.*

<sup>66</sup> *John 15:5.*

<sup>67</sup> *2 Corinthians 3:5; Ephesians 3:8.*

<sup>68</sup> *Psalm 39:4; Acts 3:14; Hebrews 4:15.*

<sup>69</sup> *Job 10:9; Isaiah 17:7.*

<sup>70</sup> *Isaiah 40:6; 2 Timothy 4:18.*

<sup>71</sup> *Psalm 39:4; Revelation 2:23; Micah 5:2; John 5:20-27.*



Can it be, that in the presence of such infinite goodness and glory, no feelings of adoration arise in your heart? It is not that He is at an immeasurable distance from you, so that what He is and what you are, have no intimate connection. But He made you, sustains you, watches you. The offices He fills towards you are those of God. And He is so unutterably good and gracious.

What remains? If you believe this testimony, you must confide in Him—you must love Him—you must adore Him. No other feelings than those of entire reliance and supreme love would at all answer the claims of such an one upon you. And they are the Scriptures of truth which, by portraying so gracious a Lord, have elicited that confidence and warranted that affection.

But this is not all. Thus far we might argue with unfallen beings, and thus might urge those holy intelligences who left not their first estate, to obey the Divine command,

### **Hebrews 1**

<sup>6</sup> Let all the angels of God worship Him.

Let us remember our position before God, fallen, guilty, strengthless, and as reasonable beings, inquiring with the deepest anxiety,

### **Acts 16**

<sup>30</sup> What must I do to be saved?

Now it is not too much to say that the hopes of all mankind with regard to salvation, from the wreck of Paradise lost to the prophetic vision of Paradise restored, are fixed on this mysterious Son of Man. On Him,

- as the seed of the woman who should bruise the head of the serpent,<sup>72</sup>
- as whose future advent cheered the saintly Enoch;<sup>73</sup>

---

<sup>72</sup> *Genesis* 3:15.

<sup>73</sup> *Jude* 14.

- as the living Redeemer on whom the patriarch Job rested his hopes of immortality;<sup>74</sup>
- as the son of Abraham, a benefactor, in whom all the families of the earth should be blessed;<sup>75</sup>
- as the Shiloh of Jacob's dying bed;<sup>76</sup>
- as the angel of the burning bush and of the fiery pillar;<sup>77</sup>
- as the Captain, and who fought for Israel and nerved the arm of her warriors;<sup>78</sup>
- as the Begotten Son of God, the assessor of His throne, the Priest for ever, and predicted by the sweet Psalmist of Israel;<sup>79</sup>
- as the virgin-born Emmanuel, foretold by Isaiah, the child endowed with a name of lustrous Deity, Wonderful, Counsellor, the Mighty God, the Father of Eternity, the Prince of Peace;<sup>80</sup>
- as the Lord our righteousness, anticipated by Jeremiah;<sup>81</sup>
- as the appearance of a man on the sapphire throne, seen in vision by Ezekiel;<sup>82</sup>
- as the Messiah announced to Daniel who should be cut off but not for himself, and should bring in everlasting righteousness;<sup>83</sup>
- as the desire of all nations, of whom Haggai wrote;<sup>84</sup> and

---

<sup>74</sup> *Job* 19:25.

<sup>75</sup> *Genesis* 22:18.

<sup>76</sup> *Genesis* 49:10.

<sup>77</sup> *Exodus* 3:2, and 14:19.

<sup>78</sup> *Exodus* 32:34.

<sup>79</sup> *Psalms* 2:7, and 110:1, 4.

<sup>80</sup> *Isaiah* 7:14, and 9:6.

<sup>81</sup> *Jeremiah* 23:6.

<sup>82</sup> *Ezekiel* 1:26.

<sup>83</sup> *Daniel* 9:24, 26.

<sup>84</sup> *Haggai* 2:7.

- as the Sun of righteousness, seen from afar by Malachi, who should rise on the benighted world with healing in his wings;<sup>85</sup>

–on Him, from age to age the faith of every believer was fastened, by promise and by prophecy.

Let me, ere I pass on, select two passages from the Old Testament for your careful consideration. That same *Psalm* which proclaims the Divine decree,

### **Psalm 2**

<sup>7</sup> Jehovah has said unto me, You are my Son, this day have I begotten You,

–closes thus:

<sup>12</sup> Kiss the Son, lest He be angry and you perish from the way, when His wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their trust in Him.

Remember the solemn denunciation,

### **Jeremiah 17**

<sup>5</sup> Cursed be the man that trusts in man, and makes flesh his arm.

Is there not food here for the most thoughtful inquiry? How can you reconcile these texts? I venture to assert only in the Gospel of the Son of God.

Again, if you turn to the 53<sup>rd</sup> chapter of *Isaiah*,

### **Isaiah 53**

<sup>6</sup> All we like sheep have gone astray, we have turned every one to his own way...

Comprehensive words! embracing the transgressions of six thousand years. If the sins of those many generations were gathered together, how vast the accumulation, how insufferable the load of guilt! It is done: for Scripture continues,

---

<sup>85</sup> *Malachi* 4:2.

<sup>6</sup> ...the Lord has laid on [has made to meet on] Him the iniquity of us all.

On Him: on whom? On the chosen servant of God in whom His soul delights,<sup>86</sup> but whose visage is marred more than any man<sup>87</sup>—on one who grows up as a tender plant,<sup>88</sup> who is despised and rejected of men, a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief.<sup>89</sup> On Him, the sins of all were laid. He was wounded for our transgressions. He was bruised for our iniquities.<sup>90</sup>

But can He sustain the load? Remember how earnest and awakened men would hold their breath in suspense, to catch an answer on which an immortality of weal or woe depended. Can He endure the burden? He can: He dies in the endurance. His soul is made an offering for sin. But death is swallowed up in victory.<sup>91</sup> He lives—He sees his seed. The pleasure of the Lord prospers in his hand.<sup>92</sup> He sees of the travail of his soul, and is satisfied<sup>93</sup>—our Redeemer, our Mediator, our Advocate.

I beseech you, my friends, to weigh that chapter on your knees. See you not, how the confidence of all mankind centers and clusters around that spontaneous victim, that dying man, that triumphant Saviour? The Lord grant that this same Scripture which

---

<sup>86</sup> *Isaiah* 42:1.

<sup>87</sup> *Isaiah* 52:14.

<sup>88</sup> *Isaiah* 53:2.

<sup>89</sup> *Isaiah* 53:3.

<sup>90</sup> Nay, more—It is, not only that He was (v. 3) acquainted with grief, but (v. 10) the Lord has put Him to grief: not only (v. 5) He was bruised for our iniquities, but (v. 10) it pleased the Lord to bruise Him: not only (v. 12) He bore the sin of many, but (v. 6) the Lord has laid on Him the iniquity of us all: not only (v. 7) He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, but (v. 10) You shall make His soul an offering for sin. If Jesus were only a spotless, sinless man, offering no vicarious atonement, how was it that a holy and just God—we will not say permitted such sufferings to light upon a perfectly innocent being,—but himself caused Him to suffer?

<sup>91</sup> *Isaiah* 25:8.

<sup>92</sup> *Isaiah* 53:10.

<sup>93</sup> *Isaiah* 53:11.

was the message of life to the eunuch of Ethiopia,<sup>94</sup> may lead you to believe with all your heart in the Divinity of the Son of God!

But now let us follow the course of history. At length,

#### **Galatians 4**

<sup>4</sup> ...the fullness of the time was come, [and] God sent forth His Son.

Are not the eyes of all designedly pointed to Him? Angels from heaven announce the glad tidings,

#### **Luke 2**

<sup>11</sup> Unto you is born...a Saviour:

—simple shepherds salute Him: and eastern wise men worship Him.<sup>95</sup> He grows up as foretold, a despised Nazarene.<sup>96</sup> But at His baptism, the heavens are opened, the Spirit of God descends like a dove upon him, and the voice of the Eternal Father proclaims,

#### **Matthew 3**

<sup>17</sup> This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

Soon the devil assaults Him—and angels minister to Him,<sup>97</sup> their Lord. His herald points him out,

#### **John 1**

<sup>29</sup> Behold the Lamb of God which takes away the sin of the world.

He speaks as man never spoke.<sup>98</sup> He works wonders of goodness and of grace, such as man never wrought.<sup>99</sup> He introduces a morality of unequalled simplicity and purity and worth.<sup>100</sup> He preaches the glad tidings of the kingdom of heaven.<sup>101</sup> But his

---

<sup>94</sup> *Acts* 8:32-37.

<sup>95</sup> *Matthew* 2:11.

<sup>96</sup> *Matthew* 2:23; *John* 1:46.

<sup>97</sup> *Matthew* 4:1-11.

<sup>98</sup> *John* 7:46.

<sup>99</sup> *John* 15:24.

<sup>100</sup> *Matthew* ch. 5 to 7.

<sup>101</sup> *Mark* 1:14.

own received Him not.<sup>102</sup> He is betrayed, condemned, and crucified. He dies, the Just for the unjust.<sup>103</sup> He lays down His life, He has power to take it again.<sup>104</sup> He rises. He ascends to the right hand of God.<sup>105</sup> There He receives gifts for men.<sup>106</sup> He sheds forth His Spirit.<sup>107</sup> He gives repentance and remission of sins.<sup>108</sup> He ever lives to make intercession for us.<sup>109</sup> He is preparing a place in glory for His children: and thence He shall shortly come again and take us unto himself, that where He is there we may be also.<sup>110</sup>

Who, I ask, can believe this simple story of redeeming grace, and not repose their whole confidence in this Saviour? Who can refrain from trusting Him with supreme reliance? Who can forbear loving Him with the most absorbing love? If Scripture forbade these emotions, as being due only to the infinite Father, what force we must lay upon ourselves to prevent them springing up in the trustful heart.

But does Scripture forbid them? nay, verily. Prophecy, as we have seen, foretold that thus it should be, and blessed the confidence. And when the Saviour walked our fallen world, suppliant sinners worship Him, and He refuses it not.<sup>111</sup> They put their whole trust in Him, and He declares it not only suitable but essential. Upon it hangs eternity.

### **John 3**

<sup>16</sup> God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whosoever believes on Him should not perish, but have eternal life.

---

<sup>102</sup> *John* 1:11.

<sup>103</sup> *1 Peter* 3:18.

<sup>104</sup> *John* 10:17-18.

<sup>105</sup> *Mark* 16:19.

<sup>106</sup> *Ephesians* 4:8; *Psalms* 68:18.

<sup>107</sup> *Acts* 2:4.

<sup>108</sup> *Acts* 5:31.

<sup>109</sup> *Hebrews* 7:25.

<sup>110</sup> *John* 14:1-3.

<sup>111</sup> *John* 9:35-38.

But is this trust altogether identical with that we are required to repose in the Father? It is one and the same. He says,

**John 14**

<sup>1</sup> Believe in God: believe also in me.

His invitations penetrate the weary heart:

**Matthew 11**

<sup>28</sup> Come unto me all you that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest:

—and His words fall like dew on the parched and thirsty soul:

**John 7**

<sup>37</sup> If any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink.

He insists that...

**John 5**

<sup>23</sup> ...all men should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father.

He concentrates the affection and the affiance of His people upon himself as the one Mediator.<sup>112</sup> He invites us to offer up our prayers in His prevalent name.<sup>113</sup> And finally, He assures us, He gives eternal life unto His own disciples,<sup>114</sup> and...

**John 6**

<sup>40</sup> ...will raise them up at the last day.

And after His ascension to glory, what is the conduct and the testimony of His chosen apostles? In the name of Jesus Christ they do all their mighty works. For Jesus Christ's sake they suffer the loss of all things. They uniformly preach Jesus Christ: and the Holy Spirit seals their message. They know nothing among men, but Jesus Christ and Him crucified.<sup>115</sup>

Yea, I should have to transcribe a great portion of the Epistles if I wanted to transfer to these pages all the evidence those letters

---

<sup>112</sup> *Matthew 11:27.*

<sup>113</sup> *John 16:23-24.*

<sup>114</sup> *John 10:28.*

<sup>115</sup> *1 Corinthians 2:1-3.*

afford, that Scripture requires us to repose our supreme reliance on the Lord Jesus Christ. The most casual glance might make us suspect, that a name which meets our eye every few lines was none other than that of the Divine Saviour of the world. Why else its perpetual recurrence? A deeper search only confirms this. Take for instance the first few verses of the epistle to the Ephesians:

### **Ephesians 1**

<sup>1</sup> Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful *in Christ Jesus*:

<sup>2</sup> Grace be to you, and peace, from God our Father, and *from the Lord Jesus Christ*.

<sup>3</sup> Blessed be *the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ*, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places *in Christ*:

<sup>4</sup> According as He has chosen us *in Him* before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy, and without blame before Him in love:

<sup>5</sup> Having predestinated us according to the adoption of children *by Jesus Christ* to himself, according to the good pleasure of His will,

<sup>6</sup> To the praise of the glory of His grace wherein He has made us accepted *in the Beloved*:

<sup>7</sup> In whom we have redemption *through His blood*, even the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace.

The privileges are surpassingly great, but mark how they are all ours IN CHRIST. It is the apostle of Jesus Christ who writes. The Church is described as the faithful...

### **Ephesians 1**

<sup>1</sup> ...in Christ Jesus.

The benediction is given from God our Father, and coordinately...

<sup>2</sup> ...from the Lord Jesus Christ.

God is praised: it is as...

<sup>3</sup> ...the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.



All spiritual blessings are ours: they are ours...

<sup>3</sup> ...in Christ.

We are chosen: it is...

<sup>4</sup> ...in Him.

We are predestinated unto the adoption of children: it is...

<sup>5</sup> ...by Jesus Christ.

We are accepted: it is...

<sup>6</sup> ...in the Beloved.

We have redemption, even the forgiveness of sins: it is...

<sup>7</sup> ...in Him through His blood.

We are indebted to Christ for all. We are compelled to look up unto Him, and say,

“O Lord, my trust is in You.”<sup>116</sup>

The force of this reasoning will appear more strongly, if you attempt to substitute here for the name of Jesus that of any man, however exalted and self-devoted, or of any creature, however lofty in the scale of creation. Make the trial. Read the passage given above, substituting the name of Michael the archangel, or of Moses the legal mediator, or of Stephen who sealed his witness with his blood, for that only...

#### **Acts 4**

<sup>12</sup> ...name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved.

You cannot do it. You stop short. It is an intolerable discord. It is blasphemy. For you feel this would be reposing in the creature an exhaustive confidence due only to the Infinite Creator, and offering to man a supreme gratitude which is the prerogative of God our Saviour.

---

<sup>116</sup> *Psalm* 7:1; 25:2; 31:1; 71:1.

Such passages might be easily multiplied. I would mention the 1<sup>st</sup> chapter of the Epistle to the Colossians, of Peter's first Epistle, of John's first Epistle;—I study all, and in all I find Jesus my Saviour. Do you admit the cry of the awakened conscience is:

**Acts 16**

<sup>30</sup> What must I do to be saved?

You must acknowledge that the reply of the New Testament from end to end,—from the angel's message to Joseph,

**Matthew 1**

<sup>21</sup> You shall call His name Jesus, for He shall save His people from their sins,

—to the ascription of praise recorded by the aged John in Patmos,

**Revelation 1**

<sup>5</sup> To Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood,

<sup>6</sup> And has made us kings and priests unto God and our Father,

—the reply, I say, is plain and unhesitating,

**Acts 16**

<sup>31</sup> Believe in the Lord Jesus Christ and you shall be saved.

It is not only that One of illimitable goodness and infinite perfections, your Creator and Preserver, stands before you, a man of limited and finite capacities: but He presents himself to you fallen, and guilty, and lost, as One who is able and willing to raise you from the lowest depths of sin and make you members of a Royal Priesthood, and cause you to reign with Him among the sons of light forever and forever. No utterance but one like Mary's satisfies His claims:

**Luke 1**

<sup>47</sup> My spirit has rejoiced in God my Saviour.

The Lord grant unto you and me like precious faith, that resting on these exceeding great and precious promises, an entrance may

be ministered unto us into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ!<sup>117</sup>

---

<sup>117</sup> 2 Peter 1:1, 4, 11.

## 4. The Deity of Jesus Christ

THE preceding truths will have prepared the way for my third proposition:

*That Scripture in the Old and the New Testament alike,  
proves the co-equal Deity of Jesus Christ  
with that of the Eternal Father:*

- by a comparison of the attributes, the majesty, and the claims of the Father and the Son;
- by the appearances of God to the Old Testament saints;
- by the direct and Divine worship paid to Christ;
- by the conjunction of the Father and the Son in Divine offices;
- by explicit assertions that Christ is Jehovah and God.

And here I would ask your further honest application of that great principle of heavenly scholarship, the...

### **1 Corinthians 2**

<sup>13</sup> ...comparing spiritual things with spiritual.

For just as in algebra, from the combination of two known quantities the unknown is found out; as in trigonometry, if out of the six parts of a triangle any three, one being a side, are given, the others are discoverable, from which simple law have resulted all the triumphs of astronomy; so in searching the Scriptures, those humble students who receive...

<sup>13</sup> ...the words not which man's wisdom teaches, but which the Holy Ghost teaches,

—prayerfully comparing and combining them, shall...

<sup>12</sup> ...know the things which are freely given to us of God.

### **1. Comparison of Attributes, Majesty, and Claims**

I would first then place side by side the witness of Scripture to the attributes, the majesty, and the claims of the Father and the Son.

Only a selection from the abundant materials could of course be made. I have exercised a rigid caution in the verses adduced in testimony of Christ, setting many aside which I fully believe bear witness of Him. But, if after candid investigation you think one, or more than one, inapplicable to the Messiah, I pray you draw your pencil through those which may seem to you even ambiguous. Sufficient, and more than sufficient will, I am persuaded, remain uncanceled.

Some marked with an asterisk are discussed or illustrated in other portions of this treatise, and will be easily found by a reference to the Scripture Index at the close. I earnestly ask your calm, dispassionate collation of these passages: and I pray you, while you proceed, to suffer the full weight of these solemn words to rest upon your mind and memory,

**Isaiah 42**

<sup>8</sup> I am Jehovah—that is my name, and my glory will I not give to another.

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ<sup>118</sup></b>
<b>1</b>	<p>From everlasting to everlasting you are God. <i>Psalm</i> 90:2</p> <p>Your throne is established of old; You are from everlasting. <i>Psalm</i> 93:2</p> <p>I am the first, and I am the last, and besides me there is no God. <i>Isaiah</i> 44:6</p>	<p>Whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting. <i>Micah</i> 5:2</p> <p>Unto the Son He said, your throne, O God, is for ever and ever. <i>Hebrews</i> 1:8</p> <p>I am the first and the last. I am He that lives and was dead. <i>Revelation</i> 1:17-18</p>

---

<sup>118</sup> In some of the passages in the left hand column, I believe the primary reference to be not to the Father but to the Son, but this does not invalidate the testimony to be derived from them, as in every case the witness is said to be of God, or of the Lord Jehovah, and no one who denied the Deity of Christ could maintain that a single passage there adduced designates the Messiah, without contradicting himself.

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
2	Do not I fill heaven and earth, says the Lord? <i>Jeremiah 23:24</i>  The Lord, He it is that goes before you—He will be with you, He will not fail you. <i>Deuteronomy 31:8</i>	He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that He might fill all things. <i>Ephesians 4:10</i>  *Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world. <i>Matthew 28:20</i>
3	I am Jehovah—I change not. <i>Malachi 3:6</i>	Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, today, and for ever. <i>Hebrews 13:8</i>
4	I am the Almighty God. <i>Genesis 17:1</i>  Whatsoever the Lord pleased, that did He in heaven and in earth. <i>Psalms 135:6</i>	*I am...the Almighty. <i>Revelation 1:8</i>  Whatsoever things He does, these also does the Son likewise. <i>John 5:19</i>
5	Can you by searching find out God? <i>Job 11:7</i>  As the Father knows me. <i>John 10:15</i>  O the depth of the riches, both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! His ways past finding out. <i>Romans 11:33</i>  Thy footsteps are not known. <i>Psalms 77:19</i>	No man knows the Son but the Father. <i>Matthew 11:27</i>  Even so know I the Father. <i>John 10:15</i>  The unsearchable riches of Christ. <i>Ephesians 3:8</i>  The love of Christ which passes knowledge. <i>Ephesians 3:19</i>
6	I am the Lord, the Holy One of Israel. <i>Isaiah 43:3</i>  A God of truth, and without iniquity. <i>Deuteronomy 32:4</i>	You denied the Holy One and the Just. <i>Acts 3:14</i>  I am...the Truth. <i>John 14:6</i>  Without sin. <i>Hebrews 4:15</i>

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
<b>7</b>	<p>In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. <i>Genesis</i> 1:1.</p> <p>I am Jehovah that makes all things, that stretches forth the heavens alone, that spreads abroad the earth by myself. <i>Isaiah</i> 44:24</p> <p>The Lord has made all things for himself. <i>Proverbs</i> 16:4</p>	<p>In the beginning was the Word. All things were made by Him. <i>John</i> 1:1, 3.</p> <p>By Him were all things created, that are in heaven and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers:</p> <p>All things were created by Him and for Him. <i>Colossians</i> 1:16</p>
<b>8</b>	<p>You preserve them all. <i>Nehemiah</i> 9:6</p> <p>In Him we live. <i>Acts</i> 17:28</p>	<p>By Him all things consist. <i>Colossians</i> 1:17</p> <p>Because I live, you shall live also. <i>John</i> 14:19</p>
<b>9</b>	<p>The King of kings, and Lord of lords. <i>1 Timothy</i> 6:15</p> <p>Your kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and your dominion endures throughout all generations. <i>Psalms</i> 145:13</p>	<p>King of kings, and Lord of lords. <i>Revelation</i> 19:16</p> <p>His dominion is an everlasting dominion...and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed. <i>Daniel</i> 7:14</p>
<b>10</b>	<p>You, even You only, know the hearts of all the children of men. <i>1 Kings</i> 8:39</p>	<p>All the churches shall know that I am He that searches the reins and hearts. <i>Revelation</i> 2:23</p>
<b>11</b>	<p>Shall not the Judge of all the earth do right? <i>Genesis</i> 18:25</p>	<p>We must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ. <i>2 Corinthians</i> 5:10</p>

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
<b>12</b>	<p>His kingdom rules over all. <i>Psalms</i> 103:19</p> <p>The Lord shall be king over all the earth. In that day there shall be one Lord, and His name one. <i>Zechariah</i> 14:9</p> <p>You whose name alone is Jehovah, are the most high over all the earth. <i>Psalms</i> 83:18</p>	<p>He is Lord of all. <i>Acts</i> 10:36</p> <p>*To us there is but one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by Him. <i>1 Corinthians</i> 8:6</p> <p>God has given Him a name which is above every name. <i>Philippians</i> 2:9</p> <p>That in all things He might have the pre-eminence. <i>Colossians</i> 1:18</p>
<b>13</b>	<p>Upon the wicked He shall rain snares, (or quick burning coals,) fire and brimstone, and a horrible (or a burning) tempest. <i>Psalms</i> 11:6</p> <p>Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says the Lord. <i>Romans</i> 12:19</p> <p>The day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God. <i>Romans</i> 2:5</p>	<p>The Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels, in flaming fire,</p> <p>Taking vengeance on them that know not God. <i>2 Thessalonians</i> 1:7-8</p> <p>And from the wrath of the Lamb, for the great day of His wrath is come and who shall be able to stand? <i>Revelation</i> 6:16-17</p>
<b>14</b>	<p>Behold the Lord God will come with strong hand—His reward is with Him. <i>Isaiah</i> 40:10</p> <p>You render to every man according to his work. <i>Psalms</i> 62:12</p>	<p>Behold, I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to give...</p> <p>Every man according to his work shall be. <i>Revelation</i> 22:12</p>
<b>15</b>	<p>To whom then will you liken God? <i>Isaiah</i> 40:18</p> <p>You, the only true God [and Jesus Christ whom You have sent]. <i>John</i> 17:3</p>	<p>The image of the invisible God. <i>Colossians</i> 1:15</p> <p>The express image of His Person. <i>Hebrews</i> 1:3</p> <p>*...His Son, Jesus Christ. This [person] is the true God and eternal life. <i>1 John</i> 5:20</p>



	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
<b>16</b>	The Lord your God, to Him shall you cleave. <i>Deuteronomy 10:20</i> Lord, You have been our dwelling-place for all generations. <i>Psalms 90:1</i> From me is your fruit found. <i>Hosea 14:8</i>	Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit except it abide in the vine, no more can you except you abide in me,...  ...for without me you can do nothing. <i>John 15:4-5</i>
<b>17</b>	Strengthen me according to your word. <i>Psalms 119:28</i>	I can do all things through Christ that strengthens me. <i>Philippians 4:13</i>
<b>18</b>	Lord, my hope is in You. <i>Psalms 39:7</i>	Jesus Christ, which is our hope. <i>1 Timothy 1:1</i>
<b>19</b>	The Lord did...set His love upon you and choose you...because the Lord loved you. <i>Deuteronomy 7:7-8</i> The Lord's portion is His people. <i>Deuteronomy 32:9</i>	I have chosen you. <i>John 15:16</i> .  ...in my name, because you belong to Christ. <i>Mark 9:41</i>

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
<b>20</b>	<p>I, even I, am Jehovah, and beside me there is no Saviour.</p> <p>- beside me no Saviour —</p> <p>- beside me no Saviour —</p> <p>- beside me no Saviour —</p> <p>- beside me no Saviour —</p> <p>- beside me no Saviour —</p> <p>- beside me no Saviour —</p> <p>- beside me no Saviour —</p> <p style="text-align: right;"><i>Isaiah 43:11</i></p>	<p>Jesus, for He shall save His people from their sins. <i>Matthew 1:21</i></p> <p>Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners. <i>1 Timothy 1:15</i></p> <p>We believe that through the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved. <i>Acts 15:11</i></p> <p>He is the Author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey Him. <i>Hebrews 5:9.</i></p> <p>He is able to save to the uttermost those that come unto God by Him. <i>Hebrews 7:25</i></p> <p>Jesus who delivered us from the wrath to come. <i>1 Thessalonians 1:10</i></p> <p>Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. <i>2 Peter 3:18</i></p> <p>Neither is there salvation in any other, for there is no other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved. <i>Acts 4:12</i></p>
<b>21</b>	<p>All flesh shall know that I am the Lord your Saviour, And your Redeemer, The mighty one of Israel.</p> <p style="text-align: right;"><i>Isaiah 49:16</i></p> <p>Let Israel hope in Jehovah...and He shall redeem Israel from all his iniquities. <i>Psalms 130:8</i></p>	<p>*Our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ, Who gave himself for us,</p> <p>That He might redeem us from all iniquity. <i>Titus 2:13-14</i></p>
<b>22</b>	<p>With You is the fountain of life, in your light shall we see light. <i>Psalms 36:9</i></p>	<p>In Him (the Word) was life, and the life was the light of men. <i>John 1:4</i></p>

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
23	<p>He [Jehovah of hosts] will swallow up death in victory. <i>Isaiah 25:8</i></p> <p>I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be your plagues; O grave, I will be your destruction. <i>Hosea 13:14</i></p>	<p>Our Saviour Jesus Christ, who has abolished death. <i>2 Timothy 1:10</i></p> <p>That through death He [Jesus] might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil, and deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. <i>Hebrews 2:14-15</i></p>

If I were to ask you to select a passage from the Old Testament, which should declare most unequivocally the supreme majesty of God, could you name a more distinctive one than the following from Isaiah? Yet illustrate this by other passages of Holy Writ, and see how all this glory appertains likewise to the only-begotten of the Father.

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
24	<p>There is no God else beside me, A just God and a Saviour. There is none beside me.</p> <p>Look up to me and be saved,</p> <p>All the ends of the earth,</p> <p>For I am God, and there is none else.</p> <p>I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return,</p>	<p>The Word was God. <i>John 1:1</i></p> <p>Jesus Christ the righteous; He is the propitiation for our sins. <i>1 John 2:2</i></p> <p>Behold the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world. <i>John 1:29</i></p> <p>I shall give you the uttermost parts of the earth. <i>Psalms 2:8</i></p> <p>Every one which sees the Son and believes on Him may have everlasting life. <i>John 6:40</i></p> <p>*We shall all stand at the judgment seat of Christ; for it is written, as I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. <i>Romans 14:10-11</i></p>

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
	<p>That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear.</p> <p>Surely shall one say, In the Lord, have I righteousness, And strength,</p> <p>Even to Him shall men come;</p> <p>And all that are incensed against Him shall be ashamed.</p> <p>In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, And shall glory.</p> <p style="text-align: right;"><i>Isaiah 45:21-25</i></p>	<p>*In the name of Jesus, every knee should bow of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth. <i>Philippians 2:10</i></p> <p>The Branch—the Lord our righteousness. <i>Jeremiah 23:5-6.</i></p> <p>Without me, you can do nothing. <i>John 15:5</i></p> <p>I will draw all men unto me. <i>John 12:32</i></p> <p>The enemies of the cross of Christ, whose end is destruction. <i>Philippians 3:18-19</i></p> <p>He was raised again for our justification. <i>Romans 4:25</i></p> <p>God forbid that I should glory save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ. <i>Galatians 6:14</i></p>
25	<p>I, even I, am He that blots out your transgressions for my own sake. <i>Isaiah 43:25</i></p> <p>Forgiving iniquity. <i>Exodus 34:7</i></p>	<p>The blood of Jesus Christ His Son, cleanses us from all sin. <i>1 John 1:7</i></p> <p>When He had by himself purged our sins. <i>Hebrews 1:3</i></p> <p>Son, your sins be forgiven you. <i>Mark 2:5.</i></p>
26	<p>You have been...a refuge from the storm, a shadow from the heat. <i>Isaiah 25:4</i></p>	<p>A man shall be...a covert from the tempest,...as the shadow of a great Rock in a weary land. <i>Isaiah 32:2</i></p>
27	<p>He makes the storm a calm, so that the waves thereof are still. <i>Psalms 107:29.</i></p>	<p>He arose and rebuked the winds and sea, and there was a great calm. <i>Matthew 8:26</i></p>
28	<p>I have satiated the weary soul. <i>Jeremiah 31:25</i></p>	<p>Come unto me all you that labor,...and you shall find rest to your souls. <i>Matthew 11:28-29</i></p>
29	<p>I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh. <i>Joel 2:28</i></p>	<p>I will send the Comforter unto you. <i>John 16:7</i></p>

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
	The Lord God and His Spirit. <i>Isaiah 48:16</i> The Spirit of your Father. <i>Matthew 10:20</i>	Spirit of Christ. <i>Romans 8:9</i> The Spirit of His Son. <i>Galatians 4:6</i> He has shed forth this. <i>Acts 2:33</i>
<b>30</b>	This is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. <i>1 John 5:3</i> You shall guide me with your counsel, and afterward receive me to glory. <i>Psalms 73:24</i>	If you love me, keep my commandments. <i>John 14:15</i>  I will receive you unto myself. <i>John 14:3</i> The glory which You have given me, I have given them. <i>John 17:22</i>
<b>31</b>	If I be a Master, where is my fear? says the Lord of hosts. <i>Malachi 1:6</i> Him shall you serve. <i>Deuteronomy 10:20</i>	One is your Master, even Christ. <i>Matthew 23:8, 10</i>  You serve the Lord Christ. <i>Colossians 3:24</i>
<b>32</b>	Your Maker is your Husband: the Lord of hosts is His name. <i>Isaiah 54:5</i>	He that has the bride, is the Bridegroom. <i>John 3:29</i> The Bride, the Lamb's wife. <i>Revelation 21:9</i>
<b>33</b>	By the grace of God, I am what I am. <i>1 Corinthians 15:10</i> The grace of God that brings salvation. <i>Titus 2:11</i>	Be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. <i>2 Timothy 2:1</i> By the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved. <i>Acts 15:11</i> (quoted above.)
<b>34</b>	The love of God shed abroad in our hearts. <i>Romans 5:5</i> Alive unto God. <i>Romans 6:11</i>  Them that love God. <i>Romans 8:28</i>	The love of Christ constrains us that we... Should live to Him that died for us. <i>2 Corinthians 5:14-15</i> If any love not the Lord Jesus Christ. <i>1 Corinthians 16:22</i>
<b>35</b>	Your word have I hid in my heart. <i>Psalms 119:11</i> You shall say, Thus says the Lord God. <i>Ezekiel 2:4</i>	Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly. <i>Colossians 3:16</i> I say unto you. <i>Matthew 5:22, 28, &amp;c.</i>

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
36	<p>Give ear, O Shepherd of Israel, You that lead Joseph like a flock. <i>Psalms</i> 80:1</p> <p>The flock of God. <i>1 Peter</i> 5:2</p> <p>I will seek that which was lost. <i>Ezekiel</i> 34:16</p> <p>I will feed my flock, I will cause them to lie down, says the Lord God. <i>Ezekiel</i> 34:15</p> <p>Jehovah is my Shepherd, I shall not want. He makes me to lie down in green pastures: He leads me beside still waters. <i>Psalms</i> 23:1, 3</p>	<p>Our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep. Hebrews 13:20</p> <p>The chief Shepherd shall appear. <i>1 Peter</i> 5:4 The Shepherd...of your souls. <i>1 Peter</i> 2:25</p> <p>I am the good Shepherd...there shall be one flock, one shepherd. <i>John</i> 10:14, 16</p> <p>My lambs, my sheep. <i>John</i> 21:15-16</p> <p>The Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost. <i>Luke</i> 19:10</p> <p>My sheep shall never perish. <i>John</i> 10:28</p> <p>The Lamb...shall feed them, and shall lead them to living fountains of water. <i>Revelation</i> 7:17</p>
37	<p>Whom Jehovah loves, He corrects. <i>Proverbs</i> 3:12</p>	<p>As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten. <i>Revelation</i> 3:19</p>
38	<p>God will render to them...eternal life. <i>Romans</i> 2:5, 7</p>	<p>Be faithful unto death, and I will give you a crown of life. <i>Revelation</i> 2:10</p>
39	<p>Blessed is the man that trusts in the Lord, and whose hope the Lord is. <i>Jeremiah</i> 17:7</p> <p>The name of the Lord is a strong tower. <i>Proverbs</i> 18:10</p>	<p>Blessed are all they that put their trust in him. <i>Psalms</i> 2:12</p> <p>Christ in you, the hope of glory. <i>Colossians</i> 1:27</p> <p>In His name shall the Gentiles trust. <i>Matthew</i> 12:21</p>
40	<p>I will greatly rejoice in the Lord, my soul shall be joyful in my God: for He has clothed me with</p>	<p>Jesus Christ whom, having not seen you love, in whom, though now you see Him not, yet, believ-</p>

	<b>Scripture Testimony to God the Father, or to God absolutely</b>	<b>Scripture Testimony to Christ</b>
	the garments of salvation. <i>Isaiah 61:10</i>	ing, you rejoice with joy unspeakable and full of glory, receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls. <i>1 Peter 1:8-9.</i>
41	That God may be all in all. <i>1 Corinthians 15:28</i>	Christ, all and in all. <i>Colossians 3:11</i>
42	God and our Father, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. <i>Galatians 1:4-5</i>	Our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ: to Him be glory both now and for ever. Amen. <i>2 Peter 3:18</i>

Let us ponder these passages with prayer. Here Scripture asserts that the Father is eternal, and the Son eternal. Now, One who is from everlasting must needs be God. But there are not two Gods. Therefore the Son is one with God, and is God.

In like manner Scripture asserts that the Son, equally with the Father, is the first and the last; is omnipresent, immutable, almighty; is incomprehensible, absolutely holy, indefectible; is the Creator, Preserver, and Governor of all things in heaven and earth; is the Searcher of all hearts, the final Judge, and the Awarder of everlasting life and death. Now, One possessing such properties and fulfilling such offices, must needs be God. But there are not two Gods. Therefore the Son is one with God, and is God.

So, likewise, Scripture asserts that unto the Son equally with the Father His people are to cleave, in Him to abide, from Him to draw their strength, and on Him to repose their hope and trust; that the Son, equally with the Father, is the alone Saviour and Redeemer of mankind; that looking up to the Son, equally with the Father, sinners are pardoned and souls are saved; that unto the supereminent Father, and equally unto the supereminent Son, every knee shall bow; that the Son, equally with the Father, is the righteousness and strength and rock, the Shepherd and the Master of His people; forgives sins, calms the conscience, gives His

holy Spirit, legislates for His people on earth, and will receive them to His glory; that the Son, equally with the Father, claims the supreme affiance of all, and is to those who believe in Him the Author of unspeakable joy and everlasting salvation. Now, One who is the object of such ultimate confidence, homage, and delight, must needs be God. But there are not two Gods. Therefore the Son is one with God, and is God.

These Scriptures are amply sufficient to bear the weight of this most solemn conclusion, and I might with blessed expectation ask,

### **John 9**

<sup>35</sup> Do you [now] believe in the Son of God?

But abounding and independent evidence remains.

## **2. Appearances of Jehovah**

For the appearances of Jehovah to the Old Testament saints, taken in connection with the assertion to Moses,

### **Exodus 33**

<sup>20</sup> You can not see my face for there shall no man see me and live,

—and with the parallel declaration of the New Testament,

### **John 1**

<sup>18</sup> No man has seen God at any time; the only-begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He has declared Him,

—sufficiently prove that He, who thus manifested himself, was the Lord Jesus. Now Jacob says,

### **Genesis 32**

<sup>30</sup> I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved,

—and this after wrestling all night long in tangible conflict with One now called a man,<sup>119</sup> now the angel,<sup>120</sup> now God,<sup>121</sup> now the

---

<sup>119</sup> *Genesis 32:24.*

<sup>120</sup> *Hosea 12:4.*

<sup>121</sup> *Genesis 32:29-30; Hosea 12:3.*



Lord God of hosts.<sup>122</sup> The elders saw the God of Israel.<sup>123</sup> Unto Moses, the Lord spoke face to face, as a man speaks with his friend.<sup>124</sup> Joshua conversed with the adorable Captain of Jehovah's host.<sup>125</sup> Manoah feared, saying,

### **Judges 13**

<sup>22</sup> We shall surely die, because we have seen God.

Isaiah cries,

### **Isaiah 6**

<sup>5</sup> Woe is me, for I am undone,...for my eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts.

Of the message then recorded, we are expressly told,

### **John 12**

<sup>41</sup> These things said Isaiah, when he saw His [Christ's] glory, and spoke of Him.

These are only selected passages. There are many others<sup>126</sup> in which the one who appears under the form of an angel or a man, is, in the immediate context, declared to be God, or Jehovah. Who, I ask, was this mysterious being? the Angel, or Sent One; He whom the Lord calls "my presence",<sup>127</sup> the visible similitude of Jehovah;<sup>128</sup> an Angel of whom the Lord says,

### **Exodus 23**

<sup>21</sup> Beware of Him, and obey his voice, provoke him not; for He will not pardon your transgressions: for my name is in Him?

This glorious being was not God the Father, for no man has seen Him at any time. But He is declared to be Jehovah and God.

---

<sup>122</sup> *Hosea* 12:5.

<sup>123</sup> *Exodus* 24:10.

<sup>124</sup> *Exodus* 33:11.

<sup>125</sup> *Joshua* 5:15, compare with *Exodus* 3:5.

<sup>126</sup> Compare *Genesis* 18:1-2, with vs. 17; *Genesis* 31:11, with vs. 13; *Genesis* 48:15, with vs. 16; *Exodus* 3:2, with vs. 4, 6; *Exodus* 13:21, with 14:19; *Judges* 6:12 with vs. 14, vs. 22 with vs. 23.

<sup>127</sup> *Exodus* 33:14.

<sup>128</sup> *Numbers* 12:8.

Are we not compelled to acknowledge that He was the Divine Word, the Son, the brightness of His Father's glory, the express image of His person?<sup>129</sup> Therefore the Word is Jehovah God.

### 3. Prayer and Worship

This is further established by the consideration that Scripture sanctions prayer to Christ, and commands the highest adoration and worship to be paid to Him.

It was not God the Father, but God the Son with whom Abraham interceded for Sodom and Gomorrah.<sup>130</sup> It was God the Son with whom Jacob wrestled in prayer, for we are told,

#### **Hosea 12**

<sup>3</sup> He had power with God; yea, he had power with the Angel and prevailed,

—when he cried,

#### **Genesis 32**

<sup>26</sup> I will not let You go, except You bless me.

It was God the Son, whose benediction he besought for his grandchildren, when he prayed,

#### **Genesis 48**

<sup>15</sup> The God which fed me, all my life long: the Angel which redeemed me from all evil, bless the lads.

In all these instances, there is direct prayer to Christ.

Again, it was God the Son, called the Angel of Jehovah, whom Moses worshiped at the bush.<sup>131</sup> It was God the Son, who appeared as a man, before whom Joshua fell on his face and worshiped. It was God the Son whose glory Gideon feared, and to whom he built the altar which records that living prayer, Jehovah-shalom (The Lord send peace).<sup>132</sup>

---

<sup>129</sup> *Hebrews 1:3; Ezekiel 10:4.*

<sup>130</sup> *Genesis 18:23-33.*

<sup>131</sup> *Exodus 3:2.*

<sup>132</sup> *Judges 6:24.*

It was God the Son, the angel of Jehovah, whose name was Wonderful,<sup>133</sup> who rose in the smoke of Manoah’s sacrifice. It was God the Son, for...

**Ezekiel 1**

<sup>26</sup> ...upon the likeness of the throne was the likeness of the appearance of a man above upon it,

–before whom Ezekiel fell upon his face. In all these instances, we have direct worship paid to Christ.

Further we read expressly in the Gospel, that the Lord Jesus was again and again worshiped, and we never find that He refused this adoration.

I cannot consent for a moment to relinquish this word “worship” on the demand of some<sup>134</sup> Unitarian writers, that it was only such reverent salutation as was by custom offered to those in authority.

But at the same time this demand requires that we carefully and candidly investigate the instances of its occurrence. No one denies that the word translated “worship” is often used in classical writers for humble and prostrate salutation. But the great question remains, what is its New Testament usage? I confess I was not prepared when I began my search for such preponderating proof of its almost universal application to Divine homage. The word occurs sixty times, and the noun formed from it once. The references are given below.

Worship offered to God	Worship offered to Christ
<i>Matthew</i> 4:10 You shall worship the Lord your God.	<i>Matthew</i> 2:2, 8, 11 By the magi.

<sup>133</sup> *Judges* 13:19; *Isaiah* 9:6.

<sup>134</sup> Thus Dr. Channing writes in reply to this argument, “It is wonderful that this fallacy so often exposed should be still repeated. Jesus indeed received worship or homage, but this was not as adoration to the infinite God: it was the homage which, according to the custom of the age, and of the Eastern world, was paid to men invested with great authority, whether in civil or religious concerns.” Quoted by Dr. Gordon.

<b>Worship offered to God</b>	<b>Worship offered to Christ</b>
<p><i>Luke</i> 4:8 You shall worship the Lord your God.</p> <p><i>John</i> 4:20-24 It occurs ten times including the noun—of the worship of the Father.</p> <p><i>1 Corinthians</i> 14:25 ...he will worship God.</p> <p><i>Revelation</i> 4:10; 5:14 ...worship Him that lives for ever and ever.</p> <p>7:11; 11:16 ...worshipped God.</p> <p>14:7 Worship Him that made heaven.</p> <p>15:4 ...worship before You, O Lord.</p> <p>19:4 ...worshipped God that sat on the throne.</p> <p>19:10; 22:9 ...worship God.</p>	<p>8:2 By the leper.</p> <p>9:18 By the ruler.</p> <p>14:33 By the disciples after the storm.</p> <p>15:25 By the woman of Tyre.</p> <p>20:20 By Salome.</p> <p>28:9, 17 By the women and disciples, after His resurrection.</p> <p><i>Luke</i> 24:52 By the disciples as He ascended.</p> <p><i>John</i> 9:38 By the man born blind.</p> <p><i>Hebrews</i> 1:6 By all the angels.</p> <p>[These next are two instances of a distinct character:]</p> <p><i>Mark</i> 5:6 By the possessed.</p> <p>15:19 Worship offered in mockery.</p>
<b>Idolatrous worship repudiated</b>	<b>Worship used intransitively</b>
<p><i>Matthew</i> 4:9; <i>Luke</i> 4:7 Worship of Satan.</p> <p><i>Acts</i> 7:43 Worship of figures.</p> <p>10:25 Human worship refused.</p> <p><i>Revelation</i> 9:20 Idolatry.</p> <p>13:4 [twice], 8, 12, 15; 14:9, 11; 16:2; 19:20; 20:4 Worship of the dragon, the beast or his image.</p> <p>19:10; 22:8 Sainlyly or angelic worship refused.</p>	<p><i>John</i> 12:20 Greeks came up to worship.</p> <p><i>Acts</i> 8:27 The eunuch comes to Jerusalem to worship.</p> <p>24:11 Paul goes to Jerusalem to worship.</p> <p><i>Hebrews</i> 11:21 Worship by Jacob.</p> <p><i>Revelation</i> 11:1 Worshipers in the temple.</p> <p>[There remain two instances in which it is used of allowed salutation to man:]</p> <p><i>Matthew</i> 18:26 By the unmerciful servant.</p> <p><i>Revelation</i> 3:9 I will make them come and worship before your feet.</p>

From which we arrive at this result, that there are twenty-two instances in which it is used of worship offered to God the Father,

or absolutely to God; and five of divine worship used intransitively; fifteen instances of worship to Jesus Christ; seventeen of idolatrous worship condemned, and two of human salutation. Of these two, moreover, in one,<sup>135</sup> the king to whom the worship is paid is evidently in his royalty a type of God: and immediately after, when the story represents a like transaction between fellow-men, the word *worshipped* is exchanged for *besought*. We are, therefore, virtually reduced to one solitary instance, and taking the New Testament for our guide, it would be as unnatural to deny, that divine worship is paid to Christ, as it would be just to accuse us of offering only human salutation to God, when we profess to worship Him in His house, because we have lately addressed one of our civil magistrates as “the worshipful the mayor.”

But the proportion of instances only presents a part of the evidence. When this same homage, described by the same word was offered to a man or angel, where it could possibly be misunderstood, as by Cornelius to Peter, or by John to his prophetic guide, the action was immediately rebuked, and the worship straightway diverted from the creature to the Creator.

Nor is this all: it is not only, that Jesus was worshiped, but the affections and petitions, which accompanied that worship, manifest, if not always distinct recognition of His true Godhead, at least, such humble dependence on His aid, as Divine aid, that if He were not God, He must needs have rectified so dangerous an approximation to idolatry.

The leper not only worshiped Him, but besought superhuman assistance:

**Matthew 8**

<sup>2</sup> Lord, if You will, You can make me clean.

The ruler not only worshiped Him, but implored His Divine interference:

---

<sup>135</sup> *Matthew* 18:26.

**Matthew 9**

<sup>18</sup> My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay your hand upon her, and she shall live.<sup>136</sup>

It was after He had manifested His Godlike power in quelling the storm, that the disciples worshiped Him, saying,

**Matthew 14**

<sup>33</sup> Of a truth, You are the Son of God.

He demanded the implicit confidence of the man born blind, ere He received his worship.<sup>137</sup> Natural love found utterance in that piercing prayer, when the woman of Tyre worshiped Him, saying,

**Matthew 15**

<sup>25</sup> Lord, help me.

His resurrection power challenged, and compelled the adoring worship of the Marys and the Apostles:<sup>138</sup> and the glory of the ascension warranted the homage they paid on Olivet.<sup>139</sup>

Nor are we confined to the word *worship*. What was it but trustful prayer, when the disciples in the storm fulfilled the Psalmist's description of tempest-tost mariners,

**Psalm 107**

<sup>28</sup> ...who cry unto the Lord in their trouble,

—by betaking themselves to Jesus,

**Matthew 8**

<sup>25</sup> Lord, save us, we perish.

What was it but prayer, when the two blind men implored a blessing no human power could bestow, crying,

---

<sup>136</sup> The distinction between such petitions, and the request to the apostles for assistance, (as *Acts 9:38*), is transparent, as Jesus in His own right, as the Messiah of God, wrought His mighty works; and they, utterly repudiating self-dependence, (*Acts 3:12*), wrought all in the name and by the power of Jesus Christ.

<sup>137</sup> *John 9:38*.

<sup>138</sup> *Matthew 28:9*.

<sup>139</sup> *Luke 24:52*.

## **Matthew 9**

<sup>27</sup> You Son of David, have mercy on us.

The reader will easily multiply examples of these supplications from the Gospel history.

Moreover, Jesus Christ inculcated prayer to himself. What petition could embrace a more glorious gift, than that, He would persuade the woman of Samaria to offer:

## **John 4**

<sup>10</sup> You would have asked of Him, and He would have given you living water,

<sup>14</sup> ...springing up into everlasting life.

Again, and He invites the weary and heavy laden to come to Him for rest.<sup>140</sup> How are we to come but by prayer? So He upbraids the Jews:

## **John 5**

<sup>40</sup> You will not come unto me, that you might have life.

How were they to come, but by confiding prayer? Yes, confidence in a love, reliance on a power, dependence on a wisdom beyond that of our fellow-men and beyond our own—this is the soul of prayer, this is the essence of worship. But this trust He solicits for himself.

## **John 14**

<sup>1</sup> Let not your heart be troubled: you believe in God, believe also in me.

And so of praise. You admit the Divine homage to the Father, of the angelic song,

## **Luke 2**

<sup>14</sup> Glory to God in the highest.

You must also admit the eucharistic tribute rendered, though by humble and human lips, when the multitudes cried,

---

<sup>140</sup> *Matthew* 11:28.

**Matthew 21**

<sup>9</sup> Hosannah to the son of David! Blessed be He that comes in the name of the Lord, Hosannah in the highest.

For when the chief priests and scribes were sore displeased, instead of rebuking this giving of thanks, He says,

**Luke 19**

<sup>40</sup> I tell you if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

**Matthew 21**

<sup>16</sup> Have you never read, out of the mouth of babes and sucklings, You have perfected praise.

Again, what was the dying act of the protomartyr Stephen, but the truest adoration of the Son of God. Realize, I pray you, that scene. Stephen full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus, standing on the right hand of God, and said,

**Acts 7**

<sup>56</sup> Behold I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

<sup>57</sup> Then they cried out...

<sup>59</sup> And stoned Stephen, invoking,<sup>141</sup> and saying, Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.

<sup>60</sup> And he kneeled down and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

The Holy Ghost, who had inspired David's devout affiance,

**Psalms 31**

<sup>5</sup> Into your hand I commit my spirit: you have redeemed me, O Lord God of truth,

—and who had dictated Solomon's declaration,

**Ecclesiastes 12**

<sup>7</sup> ...the spirit shall return unto God who gave it,

---

<sup>141</sup> I need not remind the reader that the word *God* is not in the Greek.



-in the plenitude of His grace, prompted the dying martyr to pray not to God the Father alone, nor to the Father through Christ, but to pray to Christ, worshiping Him with his latest breath as very and eternal God.

Again, Paul addresses prayer to God the Father, and to the Lord Jesus Christ, without respect to order of names:

Now God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way unto you. <i>1 Thessalonians 3:11</i>	Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God, even our Father, comfort your hearts. <i>2 Thessalonians 2:16-17.</i>
---	---

Here is express and direct supplication, so that we need not marvel this was one distinctive name of Christian believers:

**1 Corinthians 1**

<sup>2</sup> ...all that in every place call upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord.

The testimony from [the Greek word for “call upon”] here, and generally translated, “call upon,” is most convincing, when compared with the Septuagint usage of the word; for it is the ordinary term for the sacred invocation of God; as, to take one example out of multitudes,

**Psalms 145**

<sup>18</sup> The Lord is nigh unto all them that call Him, to all that call upon Him in truth.

It is employed in the New Testament for prayer to God the Father,

**1 Peter 1**

<sup>17</sup> If you call upon the Father,...

It describes such spiritual worship that, whether offered to the Father, or to the Son, salvation is indissolubly connected with it,

**Romans 10**

<sup>13</sup> Whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord, shall be saved.

And yet it is, without a shadow of a doubt, applied to the invocation of the Lord Jesus:

**Acts 9**

<sup>14</sup> ...all that call on your name,

<sup>21</sup> ...them which called on this name,

–and, for the context compels us to interpret the following words of Christ,

**Romans 10**

<sup>12</sup> The same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon Him.

Before we pass on, let us ponder that declaration of Paul, with regard to his crucified Lord:

**Philippians 2**

<sup>9</sup> God has highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name:

<sup>10</sup> That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth;

<sup>11</sup> And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

Regard this fact as you will, refine it as you may, spiritualize it to the utmost, if Jesus were man only, it would prefigure the universal exaltation of a creature. The mighty suasion of a creature's name, would bring every intelligent being to his knees, from the highest archangel to the feeblest saint: the name of a creature would swell the tide of celestial adoration, and tremble on the lips of the contrite penitent: and the supremacy of a creature would overshadow heaven, and earth, and hell. Could this tend to the glory of God the Father? Nay, verily. That name, which is above every name, is Christ's, with emphatic propriety,

**Titus 1**

<sup>3</sup> God, our Saviour.

The latest revelation of Scripture confirms this truth, beyond contradiction. Is it Divine worship of the Father, when Peter, having prayed the God of all grace to perfect, stablish, strengthen,

and settle His people, closes his solemn prayer, with the equally solemn doxology,

**1 Peter 5**

<sup>11</sup> To Him, be glory and dominion, for ever and ever. Amen.

You admit it, you call it “adoration to the infinite God.” Only be consistent. John, in Patmos, cries,

**Revelation 1**

<sup>5</sup> Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood, and has made us kings and priests unto God and His Father, to Him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

The words both in Greek and English, are identical; the adoration is the same; and the Beings worshiped—the God of all grace, and the bleeding Saviour—are one indivisible Jehovah.<sup>142</sup>

And when the veil is drawn aside in the celestial temple, what is, I pray you, the nature of their worship? O Spirit of the living God, engrave this transparent evidence on every doubting heart!

**Revelation 5**

<sup>8</sup> The four living creatures and the four-and-twenty elders fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them, harps and golden vials, full of odors, which are the prayers of saints.

<sup>9</sup> And they sung a new song, saying, You are worthy to take the book and to open the seals, for you were slain, and have redeemed us to God by your blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

<sup>10</sup> And have made us unto our God, kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.

<sup>11</sup> And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the living creatures, and the elders: and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of thousands;

<sup>12</sup> Saying, with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honor, and glory, and blessing.

---

<sup>142</sup> Compare also the doxology to Christ, *2 Peter* 3:18.

<sup>13</sup> And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them heard I saying, Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power, be unto Him that sits upon the throne and unto the Lamb, for ever and ever.

<sup>14</sup> And the four living creatures said, Amen. And the four-and-twenty elders fell down, and worshiped Him, that lives for ever and ever.

This testimony is guarded on every side. You have first, the redeemed adoring the Lamb only, with prostrate adoration. Then numbers without number of the angels, adore the Lamb likewise. Then the whole universe, in similar adoration bless both the eternal Father and the Lamb. And, lastly, there is the expressive echo of praise to the eternal Father alone.

You cannot say it is not the highest worship, for once it is offered to the Eternal alone (vs. 14).<sup>143</sup> You cannot say it is offered to the Father alone, for once the Lamb is united with the Father (vs. 13). You cannot say it is offered to the Father only through the Son, for twice it is offered alone to the Lamb that was slain (vs. 9, 12).

It is the utmost homage heaven can pay. The spirits of the just made perfect have no higher tribute to give. The angels of light can offer no more exhaustive ascription of their devotion. No vision that you could have conceived, no language that you could have employed, could more distinctly authorize our rendering to Christ the highest and the deepest adoration, seraphic love, confiding trust, everlasting praise.

I have dwelt the longer on this portion of my argument, for this is, of itself, sufficient to set the question at rest for ever, when we

---

<sup>143</sup> Or if, as is the most probable reading, you omit, with Tregelles, in vs. 14, the words, "Him that lives for ever and ever," the worship is addressed absolutely to the Deity. It will scarcely be believed, that those who have refused to admit adoration in [the Greek word for *worshiped*] when applied to Jesus Christ, have objected that here the self-same word is applied only to the Father.

remember that Jesus Christ himself, gathering up the testimony of Scripture, says,

**Matthew 4**

<sup>10</sup> It is written, you shall *worship* the Lord your God, and Him only shall you serve.

But we have seen that the highest worship and service on earth, and in heaven, is rendered to the Son. Therefore, He is the Lord our God.

**4. Conjunction of Names**

Once more this truth is proved, by the conjunction of the name of the Lord Jesus with that of our heavenly Father, in offices where the association of the Creator with His creature, would confound the infinite distinction between God and man.

This evidence, though somewhat of a circumstantial and incidental character, is, from the exceeding solemnity of its use in the New Testament, peculiarly conclusive. The combination of the name of the Most High with one subordinately employed in the evident capacity of his servant, is of easy explanation:<sup>144</sup> though even this is rare in Scripture: but the conjunction of the infinite God, with one coordinately engaged in manifest equality of rank, is utterly inexplicable on the Unitarian hypothesis. Examples will most readily illustrate my meaning:

**Matthew 28**

<sup>19</sup> Go and disciple all nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

Is it, for a moment, conceivable, that He who sees the end from the beginning, and knew that this would be the standard formula of Christian baptism, would suffer that in this most solemn rite, the name of a creature with a derived being, should coalesce into His own name, which alone is Jehovah, the increate Father?

---

<sup>144</sup> As *Exodus* 14:31 and *Judges* 7:20.

## **John 14**

<sup>21</sup> He that loves me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him: and will manifest myself unto him.

<sup>23</sup> If a man love me he will keep my words, and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

The love of the Father and of the Son is represented as an equal privilege,—the access of the Father and of His Son to the soul of the obedient believer is a common access,—and the indwelling of the Father and of the Son a combined habitation. What created being could use such language? It warrants the parallel declaration of John's Epistle,

### **1 John 1**

<sup>3</sup> Truly our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son Jesus Christ,

—but it obliges us, at the same time to confess, that Jesus, in saying God was His Father, made himself equal with God.

### **John 17**

<sup>3</sup> This is life eternal to know You the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent.

Compare with this:

### **2 Peter 1**

<sup>2</sup> Grace and peace be multiplied unto you, through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord.

If Jesus Christ were only an angelic or human prophet, revealing the Father, is it credible that the intimate heartknowledge of the expositor should be put on the same level with the knowledge of God, as equally essential to the life of the soul, and equally indispensable for the sustenance of that life?

Again, I take up the Epistles. The prefaces are most suggestive, whether you regard the embassy of the writers, or the designation of the church addressed, or the benediction implored.

As to the commission by virtue of which they acted, you find almost every combination employed:

**Titus 1**

<sup>1</sup> Paul, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ.

**James 1**

<sup>1</sup> James, a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

**1 Peter 1**

<sup>1</sup> Peter, an apostle of Jesus Christ.

**2 Peter 1**

<sup>1</sup> Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ.

**Jude**

<sup>1</sup> Jude, the servant of Jesus Christ.

**Galatians 1**

<sup>1</sup> Paul, an apostle,...by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised Him from the dead.

Would not this interchangeable variety, if Christ were man only, confuse every reverential distinction between the Creator and the creature? Though here the difference between the loftiest monarch and his lowliest subject sinks into nothing, can you imagine an earthly plenipotentiary sent forth, now styling himself...

...a servant of the emperor and an ambassador of the chancellor;

—now,

...a servant of the emperor and of the chancellor;

—now,

...an ambassador of the chancellor;

—now,

...a servant and an ambassador of the chancellor;

–now,

–the servant of the chancellor;

–now,

...an ambassador (sent) by the chancellor and by the emperor?

Who would not think that the imperial supremacy was greatly compromised by such language? And yet, there the distinction to be observed is only between two men of equal nature, though unequal rank. But no distinction is drawn in this celestial commission: Is not then the original authority equal?

The designation of the churches addressed, is also perfectly unrestricted:

**1 Corinthians 1**

<sup>2</sup> Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus.

**Ephesians 1**

<sup>1</sup> To the saints which are at Ephesus, and the faithful in Christ Jesus.

**Philippians 1**

<sup>1</sup> To all the saints in Christ Jesus, which are at Philippi.

**1 Thessalonians 1**

<sup>1</sup> Unto the church of the Thessalonians, which is in God the Father, and in the Lord Jesus Christ.

Also,

**2 Thessalonians 1**

<sup>1</sup> The church...in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

It is to these two last descriptions of the Thessalonian church, I would especially direct your attention. Was then their spiritual status equally, indiscriminately consistent in the Father and the Son? Then to that church the Father and the Son were equally the Rock of their salvation.



And to complete the evidence, the benediction besought by the great apostle of the Gentiles is almost invariably in these words:<sup>145</sup>

“Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ.”<sup>146</sup>

Why this mutual derivation of spiritual blessing from the Father and the Son? Surely, because equally in the Father and in the Son have we eternal life.

I might also adduce the prayers<sup>147</sup> where, without regard to precedence of names, blessings are implored from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ himself, as co-equal in their power to grant the petition urged.<sup>148</sup>

But I hasten to that wondrous benediction which has dropped, as the gentle dew from heaven, upon the church of Christ for eighteen centuries:

### **2 Corinthians 13**

<sup>14</sup> The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all. Amen.

Consider, I pray you, in the baptismal and in this benedictory formula, the meaning for which those who insist on the mere humanity of Jesus Christ contend. The first, as expounded by them, would run thus:

*Baptizing them into the name of the Father, and of an exalted man, and of a certain influence of the Father.*

---

<sup>145</sup> I may mention, in passing, there is a remarkable addition in the apostolic Epistles to Timothy and Titus. All the others that bear the name of Paul, begin with “Grace and peace;” these have a most gracious enlargement, “Grace, mercy, and peace.” He who knew so well a minister’s heart, interlined, as it were, his usual salutation-prayer, with *mercy*. How precious a word to ministers! And never more precious, than when treating of the awful mysteries of the faith.

<sup>146</sup> *1 Corinthians* 1:3; *Philippians* 1:2; *Colossians* 1:2; *1 Thessalonians* 1:1. John uses the same benediction in *Revelation* 1:4.

<sup>147</sup> Quoted p. 95.

<sup>148</sup> *1 Thessalonians* 3:11; *2 Thessalonians* 2:16-17.

The second would be thus interpreted:

*The grace of a creature, and the love of the Creator, and the communion of creative energy, be with you all. Amen.*

Your reason and conscience alike, refuse to believe that this inextricable confusion between God and man, between a person and an abstraction, is sanctioned by Scripture. And then in 2 *Corinthians* 13:14, why this notable change of the order observed in *Matthew* 28:19, if not to show that...

“...in this Trinity, none is afore or after other, none is greater or less than another”?<sup>149</sup>

These two verses, pondered and prayed over, seem to me sufficient to decide the controversy for ever.

But if further testimony is needed, we have that of every creature in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, who cry without intermission and without pause, and therefore without the possibility of any distinction (as between the *dulia* and *latria* of the Romanists) being drawn in their adoration:

#### **Revelation 5**

<sup>13</sup> Blessing, and honor, and glory, and power, be unto Him that sits on the throne, and unto the Lamb for ever and ever.

And, finally, of the glory of the heavenly Jerusalem, we read,

#### **Revelation 21**

<sup>22</sup> I saw no temple therein, for the Lord God Almighty, and the Lamb, are the temple of it.

<sup>23</sup> And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it, for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

Why (I press the question on your conscience) this co-equal and cooperating glory of the Lamb with the omnipotent God? Could you substitute any created man or angel for His excellent

---

<sup>149</sup> Creed of S. Athanasius.

Name? Never. For He alone, in the unity of the Holy Ghost, is One with God, and is God. The Lord, of His infinite mercy, grant that I who write, and they who read these pages, may stand with that palm-bearing multitude of the redeemed, who have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of Jesus, and who cry aloud evermore,

### **Revelation 7**

<sup>10</sup> Salvation to our God who sits on throne, and unto the Lamb.

## **5. Explicit Assertions**

It remains that we consider the explicit assertions that Jesus Christ is Jehovah and God. These assertions are neither few, nor obscure. But I would venture again to remind my readers, that the momentous inquiry in which we are engaged is no mere intellectual problem, to be grasped by the power of human reason, and to be solved by the skill of human analysis, for:

### **1 Corinthians 12**

<sup>3</sup> No man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost.

And I would ask them to lift up their hearts with me, that the Spirit of truth may guide us into all truth, that He may glorify Jesus, and that He may take of the things of Christ, and show them unto us.<sup>150</sup>

The title JEHOVAH is the grand, the peculiar, and the incommunicable name of God. It neither is applied to any created being throughout the Scriptures, nor can be applied in reason, for it imports the necessary, independent, and eternal existence of the Most High. Of the infinite, self-existent essence implied by this name, it is impossible for us to form a full and adequate idea;—because we and all other creatures have but a finite derivative essence. Our sublimest notions of such uncircumscribed existence must fall infinitely more short of the truth, than the smallest animalcule or atom floating in the air of the vast dimensions of universal nature. We could not even have conceived anything of the peculiarities, which this name teaches us of the Almighty;

---

<sup>150</sup> *John* 16:13-14.

if He had not been pleased to reveal himself under it, and to declare those distinguishing peculiarities to us.

Jehovah, Ehjah, and Jah, are names expressive of the incommunicable essence; not names of office. The word Jah, stands simply for the Divine essence, or for Him who is, and who necessarily must be. The name Ehjah, occurs nowhere but in *Exodus* 3:14, and means not only Him who necessarily is, but who necessarily will be. It regards the future Eternal, and demonstrates the immutability of the Divine existence. The title Jehovah, includes the past, the present, and the future Eternal; that is, according to our conceptions, for all things and every division of that duration which we understand by time, are present with him though successive to us. Thus the inspired apostle, finding no word in Greek to represent the idea of the Hebrew, uses a periphrasis or comment on the word, and expresses the name Jehovah by “He that is, that was, and that is to come.” The word Jehovah (which contains the other two) imports in itself an independent essence; and it denotes to us and to whole creation, both the source of life and the continual maintenance of it.<sup>151</sup>

Now we find certain prophetic declarations in the Old Testament regarding Jehovah fulfilled, as ruled by the New Testament, in Christ Jesus. This is, perhaps, the most conclusive evidence that could be adduced—an inspired interpretation of an inspired text—so that, if I may adopt the apostle’s words,

### Hebrews 6

<sup>18</sup> By two immutable things in which it is impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us.

The voice of him that cries in the wilderness, Prepare the way of Jehovah! make straight in the desert a highway for our God. <i>Isaiah</i> 40:3	This is He that was spoken of by Isaiah the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare the way of the Lord. <i>Matthew</i> 3:3
--	---

---

<sup>151</sup> Serle’s *Horae Solitariae*.

Now John Baptist’s voice, without controversy, was heard in the wilderness, preparing the way for Christ. Therefore, Christ is Jehovah, our God.<sup>152</sup>

<p>Sanctify Jehovah of hosts himself, and let Him be your fear, and let Him be your dread, and He shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling, and for a rock of offence to both the houses of Israel. <i>Isaiah 8:13-14</i></p>	<p>Unto you, therefore, which believe, He [Christ] is precious; but a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient. <i>1 Peter 2:7-8</i></p>
---	--

The stone of stumbling, as Isaiah affirms, is “Jehovah of hosts himself,” but as Peter interprets it, (for he is referring to what is contained in the Scripture, vs. 6,) this stone is Christ. Therefore, Christ is Jehovah of hosts himself.

<p>And I [Jehovah, which stretches forth the heavens, &amp;c. see vs. 1] will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the Spirit of grace and supplication, and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced. <i>Zechariah 12:10</i></p>	<p>And again, another Scripture says, They shall look on Him [Christ] whom they pierced. <i>John 19:37</i></p>
---	--

The prophet declares the One who is pierced is Jehovah speaking of himself, but according to John’s inspired interpretation, Christ crucified is here predicted. Therefore, Christ is...

**Zechariah 12**

<sup>1</sup> ...Jehovah, which stretches forth the heavens, and lays the foundation of the earth, and forms the spirit of man within him.

<p>My eyes have seen the King, Jehovah of hosts. <i>Isaiah 6:5</i></p>	<p>These things said Isaiah, when he saw His glory, and spoke of Him. <i>John 12:41</i></p>
--	---

---

<sup>152</sup> So it results from a comparison of *Luke 1:76*, and *Matthew 11:10*, that Jesus Christ is the Lord and the Highest. Cf. Jones, p. 4.

The message recorded determines the occasion to be the same. Therefore, Jesus Christ, of whom the inspired apostle is speaking, is Jehovah of hosts, before whom the seraphim veiled their faces in lowliest adoration.

<p>I [Jehovah] have sworn by myself...that unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear. <i>Isaiah 45:23</i></p>	<p>We shall all stand at the judgment seat of Christ: for it is written, As I live, says the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. <i>Romans 14:11</i></p>
--	---

Paul incontrovertibly establishes his assertion, that we shall stand at the judgment seat of Christ, by this solemn oath of Jehovah, recorded by Isaiah. Therefore, Christ is Jehovah, who says,

**Isaiah 45**

<sup>21</sup> There is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me.

When we remember the solemn protest of Him who calls himself the Jealous God:

**Isaiah 42**

<sup>8</sup> I am Jehovah; that is my Name: and my glory will I not give to another,

—and when we reflect on the awful judgments denounced on those who render to the creature the supreme worship due to the Creator, the above comparison of Scripture with Scripture, wherein the Holy Ghost interprets, explains, and applies His own language, presents the most irrefragable proof that Jesus Christ is the Eternal, Increate, Alone, Jehovah of hosts, the Highest, the Lord our God.

And here may be the most convenient place to introduce a few remarks on the witness we derive from the word “Lord.” No doubt it is often used by classical, and sometimes by the sacred writers, as a human appellation. But then the facts remain, that it is the word, equivalent to Adonai, which the Jews, through their reluctance to pronounce the awful name Jehovah, continually em-

ployed as its synonyme; that it is the word by which Jehovah is uniformly translated by the Septuagint, even in *Exodus* 6:3; and further, that standing by itself in the New Testament, it designates in multiplied passages the Infinite Father.

We must look, therefore, broadly to its general use by Christ and His apostles. And what is the result? The word occurs 737 times in the New Testament—of these, in 18 instances it is confessedly applied to man or men. In 54 instances it appears in the discourses and parables of Christ, where the master described as Lord represents or typifies the Father or himself: and in 665 cases, the vast remainder, it is applied indiscriminately to the Eternal Father or to the Son. Lists of the first two classes are given below.

<p>Instances in which the word Lord [Greek: <i>Kurios</i>] occurs in the discourses and parables of the Gospels, where the Lord, master, or householder represents or typifies God the Father, or God the Son:</p> <p><i>Matthew</i> 6:24; 10:24-25; 13:27; 18:25-27, 31-32, 34; 20:8; 21:30, 40; 24:45-46, 48, 50; 25:18-26, ten times.</p> <p><i>Mark</i> 12:9; 13:35.</p> <p><i>Luke</i> 10:2; 12:36-47, seven times; 13:8; 14:21-23; 16:3, 5, 6, 8; 19:16, 18, 20, 25; 20:13, 15.</p> <p><i>John</i> 13:16; 15:15, 20.</p> <p>I was in some doubt whether to add to this list:</p> <p><i>Matthew</i> 25:11; <i>Luke</i> 13:25;</p> <p>—but in these addresses the parable seems almost lost in the reality.</p>	<p>Instances in which the word Lord [Greek: <i>Kurios</i>] is used of man:</p> <p><i>Matthew</i> 27:63, by the Jews to Pilate.</p> <p><i>Luke</i> 19:33, of the owners of the colt.</p> <p><i>John</i> 12:21, by the Greeks to Philip.</p> <p><i>Acts</i> 16:16,19, masters of the damsel. 16:30, by the jailer to Paul and Silas. 25:26, by Festus, of Augustus.</p> <p><i>1 Corinthians</i> 8:5, lords many.</p> <p><i>Galatians</i> 4:1, of the heir.</p> <p><i>Ephesians</i> 6:5, 9. <i>Colossians</i> 3:22; 4:1, of masters.</p> <p><i>1 Timothy</i> 6:15, [Lord] of lords.</p> <p><i>1 Peter</i> 3:6, by Sara, of Abraham.</p> <p><i>Revelation</i> 7:14, by John to the elder. 17:14: 19:16, [Lord] of lords.</p>
---	--

Now it is trifling with this question to assert that the passages adduced in the *second column*, invalidate all the proof to be derived from the hundreds of passages in which Jesus Christ is called Lord, and as Lord is believed in, served, and worshiped. The

servant of a nobleman who addresses him as “my lord,” does not confound his duty to his master and his God.

Now of these eighteen instances with scarcely an exception, was there the remotest possibility of Divine worship being intended to the party thus designated? Indeed, in twelve of these cases, the word is in the plural. But what of those very numerous instances in which it is applied to Jesus Christ? Therein He is described as...

**Acts 10**

<sup>36</sup> ...Lord of all:

- as the Lord, even Jesus, He appeared to Saul in vision:<sup>153</sup>
- as the Lord, Paul besought Him to remove his thorn in the flesh:<sup>154</sup>
- He is declared to be the second man, the Lord from heaven:<sup>155</sup>
- and as the Lord, the righteous judge, He will give a crown of righteousness to all them that love His appearing.<sup>156</sup>

Now to one thus described as Lord, seeing that the name is applied to the Father and the Son indiscriminately, so that, in many places, the difficulty is very great of knowing whether the Eternal Father or the Lord Jesus Christ be intended, the risk of ascribing Divine worship would be imminent indeed. The collation of two passages from the Old, with two passages from the New Testament, seems to clinch the argument:

Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord. <i>Deuteronomy</i> 6:4 And the Lord shall be king over all the earth. In that day, there shall be one Lord, and his name One.	There is one Lord. <i>Ephesians</i> 4:5.  To us...there is...one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by Him. <i>1 Corinthians</i> 8:6
--	---

<sup>153</sup> *Acts* 9:17.

<sup>154</sup> *2 Corinthians* 12:8-9.

<sup>155</sup> *1 Corinthians* 15:47.

<sup>156</sup> *2 Timothy* 4:8.



Here the apostle uses the very words to which the Jews clung with such tenacity, as establishing the fundamental truth of the Unity of God; and adapting the very words of the common version, the Septuagint, applies them to Jesus Christ. There appears, therefore, in this name of Christ, as used in the New Testament, explicit declaration that He is the Eternal Jehovah.

As a link of connection between the testimony of the Old and New Testament to the person of the Messiah, I would now entreat the reader's calm and prayerful consideration of the first two chapters of the *Epistle to the Hebrews*. Paul is proving the preeminence of Christ over all other prophets, and the essential difference between His and the angelic nature. If exorbitant views of His Divine dignity had crept into the church, here, at least, we should look for the correction of error, and for definition of the truth. And how then is He described?

### Hebrews 1

<sup>1</sup> God, who at sundry times and in divers manners<sup>157</sup> spoke in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

<sup>2</sup> Has in these last days spoken unto us by *His* Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds.

<sup>3</sup> Who, being the brightness of His glory, and the express image of His person, and upholding all things by the word of His power, when He had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;

<sup>4</sup> Being made so much better than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

<sup>5</sup> For unto which of the angels said He at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten You? And again, I will be to Him a Father, and He shall be to me a Son.

<sup>6</sup> And again, when He brought in the first-begotten into the world, He said, And let all the angels of God worship Him.

<sup>7</sup> And of the angels, He said, Who makes His angels spirits, and His ministers a flame of fire.

<sup>157</sup> Or, "in many fragments," little by little. Cf. *1 Corinthians* 13:9.

<sup>8</sup> But unto the Son *He said*, Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of your kingdom.

<sup>9</sup> You have loved righteousness and hated iniquity; therefore God, *even* your God, has anointed You with the oil of gladness above your fellows.

<sup>10</sup> And You, Lord, in the beginning have laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of your hands:

<sup>11</sup> They shall perish, but You remain, and they all shall wax old as does a garment;

<sup>12</sup> And as a vesture shall You fold them up, and they shall be changed: but You are the same, and your years shall not fail.<sup>158</sup>

I would only here again remind you, we have a Divine interpretation of the Divine Scriptures. Whatever be your preconceived view of these verses, the apostle, writing as he was moved by the Holy Ghost, adduces them as *proof texts* of the glory of Christ. In the following chapter, we find this wonderful Saviour made a little lower than the angels, for the suffering of death,<sup>159</sup> perfected through suffering, taking part of flesh and blood, in all things made like unto His brethren, having suffered, being tempted:<sup>160</sup> but in these verses I have quoted, how transcendent His Majesty!

- The goodly fellowship of the prophets were His forerunners.
- The innumerable company of angels are His worshippers.
- He is seated on the everlasting throne.
- He is the only-begotten Son of the Father.
- He is addressed as God.
- He is adored as the immutable, immortal Jehovah.

I feel any attempt to enforce this evidence may mar its impressive grandeur, and I can only pray that the word of God may here

---

<sup>158</sup> The most severe criticism has not really brought one sustained objection against the received version.

<sup>159</sup> *Hebrews* 2:9-10.

<sup>160</sup> *Hebrews* 2:14, 17-18.

be quick and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword,<sup>161</sup> in the hand of the Almighty Spirit of God.

I might well close this part of my argument here. Scripture declares that our God, whose name alone is Jehovah, is One Jehovah, and is jealous of His own attributes and of our confidence. In a word, we rest on God. At the same time, Scripture declares that all these Divine attributes belong to Jesus Christ, who claims equal adoration and equal trust, as being himself Jehovah, our God and Saviour. Our faith centers on Jesus Christ. Christ is all, and in all, to the Christian. In a word, we rest on Christ. Here is our Rock, *inexpugnabile saxum*.<sup>162</sup> You cannot add to its security, for it is impregnable. You cannot increase its stability, for it is immovable. You cannot make absolute certainty, more certain.

Nevertheless, many express assertions remain. And if I may return to my former illustration from trigonometry, in the solution of a triangle if a side be measured and two angles be observed, nothing can add to the perfect certainty with which a mathematician tells you the number of degrees in the third angle, and the length of the remaining sides. Nothing would increase his assurance. His conclusion is demonstrably true. Still, if an independent observer could tell you the measurement of those parts which were the object of algebraic investigation, the fact of their precise coincidence, which of course and of necessity appears, is a further proof with what security you may always rest on the results of mathematical science. I would then, draw into a brief compass, some few of these positive deductions. They state expressly what other Scriptures prove demonstratively.

Let us then humbly weigh that passage, against which, skeptical criticism has directed its fiercest attacks, but from which they have all recoiled, and which stands impregnable as ever, a rock foundation for the faith of the humble believer.

---

<sup>161</sup> Hebrews 4:12.

<sup>162</sup> Latin for "impregnable rock."

## John 1

<sup>1</sup> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

<sup>2</sup> The same was in the beginning with God.

<sup>3</sup> All things were made by Him, and without Him was not anything made that was made.

<sup>4</sup> In Him was life; and the life was the light of men.

<sup>10</sup> He was in the world and the world was made by Him, and the world knew Him not.

<sup>14</sup> And the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory (the glory as of the only-begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

<sup>18</sup> No man has seen God at any time: the only-begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, He has declared *Him*.<sup>163</sup>

If anything of man could add strength to this Divine testimony to Jesus, it would be the fact of Philo, a Jew of Alexandria, contemporary with Christ, but manifestly ignorant of His history, describing the Divine Word, as the Son of God, the First Begotten, the Image of God, the Angel, a second God, the instrument of Deity in the creation, the High Priest and Mediator, perfectly sinless himself, and the fountain of virtue to men: and of John adopting this self-same name, as one indicative of the Messiah, and understood by those who should read his Gospel. But Scripture is its own best interpreter. And this same apostle, writing in after years of the advent of Christ, says,

---

<sup>163</sup> I earnestly commend to the reader to weigh Dr. Pye Smith's lucid exposition of this passage, and pray that the question he puts into the lips of the sincere Unitarian, may be applied with Divine power. "Am I not inwardly sensible that in my attempts to frame an interpretation of this paragraph, which may wear at all the semblance of consistency, I am rowing against the stream; I am putting language to the torture; I am affixing significations to words and phrases, which all my efforts can scarcely keep me from exclaiming that they could never have been in the contemplation of the original writer? Have I not then awakening reasons for the suspicion that I have not framed my opinions with that close and faithful investigation, which the solemn greatness of the case requires? Am I not bound to review the whole subject in the sight of the all-seeing God, and under the sense of my accountableness to Him as the author and revealer of truth?"

## Revelation 19

<sup>13</sup> He was clothed in a vesture dipped in blood, and His name is called the Word of God.

Christ then, is the Word, Christ is the Creator, Christ is God. This introduction to his Gospel was, I doubt not, constructed by the inspired apostle to be a bulwark against every doubt, and accordingly, for near two thousand years,

as a tower of strength,  
Which stood four-square to every wind that blew,

–it has kept the hearts of innumerable believers in perfect peace.

There is another passage I cannot pass over, though space forbids me to enter into it fully, *John* 5:17-29; when, the Jews having accused our Lord of making himself equal with God, because He said God was His Father, instead of protesting against their construction of His words, which, if only a man, He would have done with indignation and abhorrence, He proceeded, while acknowledging the subordination of His mission as man, to set forth the original and essential supremacy of His person as God. For:

- if the Son does all things what things soever the Father does:<sup>164</sup>
- if the Son quickens whom He will:<sup>165</sup>
- if the dead shall hear His voice and live:<sup>166</sup>
- if He executes judgment on the universe:<sup>167</sup>
- if all men must honor the Son, even as they honor the Father:<sup>168</sup>

–then is He equally Almighty: equally the communicative fountain of life: equally God who alone can raise the dead: equally the

---

<sup>164</sup> *John* 5:19.

<sup>165</sup> *John* 5:21.

<sup>166</sup> *John* 5:25.

<sup>167</sup> *John* 5:27.

<sup>168</sup> *John* 5:23.

Omniscient who alone can judge an assembled world: and equally the centre of universal homage and adoration.

I proceed to the utterance of Thomas, when the permitted touch of his risen Saviour scattered the dark clouds of unbelief:

**John 20**

<sup>28</sup> My Lord and my God!

I know that it has been alleged that this was an exclamation of surprise, addressed to God the Father: but I can hardly believe any earnest seeker after truth can thus be baffled. No one who knows the language of the heart, can here misinterpret it. The apostle had given up all for Jesus Christ: his master had been seized, and crucified, and buried: and Thomas's faith was sorely tried. But now his Lord stood before him—he could doubt no more; and,

<sup>28</sup> He answered and said,...

Not without reason is the word “answered” here inserted—the words were addressed as an answer to One who stood his proven Saviour before him:—it was the deep response of the heart of Thomas to Christ.

<sup>28</sup> He answered and said, My Lord and my God!

I append other passages with a few brief remarks of the most learned and impartial critics:

**Romans 9**

<sup>5</sup> Of whom, as concerning the flesh, Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever.

“Every Greek scholar must admit, that the fair and just construction of the sentence is that which is generally received.”<sup>169</sup>

**Colossians 2**

<sup>9</sup> For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily.

---

<sup>169</sup> P. Smith, vol. ii. p. 683.

“*The Godhead, i.e. Deity, the essential being of God—bodily, i.e. manifested corporeally in His present glorified body. Before His incarnation, it dwelt in Him as the [Greek words for ‘incorporeal speech’], but not [Greek word for ‘physically’], as now that He is the [Greek words for ‘incarnate word’].*”<sup>170</sup>

### **Ephesians 5:**

<sup>5</sup> The kingdom of [Him who is] Christ and God.

“Not only the principle of the rule and the invariable practice of the New Testament with respect to [Greek word for “God”], and all other attributives, compel us to acquiesce in the identity of [Greek words for “Christ and God”], but the same truth is evinced by the examination of the Greek fathers.”<sup>171</sup>

### **Titus 2**

<sup>13</sup> ...the glorious appearing of our great God and Saviour, Jesus Christ.

Cf. Scholefield’s note in his “Hints.” Middleton says,

“If here the sacred writer did not mean to *identify* the ‘great God and the Saviour,’ he expressed himself in a manner which [could not but] mislead his readers.”<sup>172</sup>

### **2 Peter 1**

<sup>1</sup> ...the righteousness of our God and Saviour, Jesus Christ.

For construction compare the expression a little below:

<sup>11</sup> ...the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.<sup>173</sup>

---

<sup>170</sup> Alford.

<sup>171</sup> Middleton, quoted by P. Smith, who says, “If this text had no relation to any controversy, and were judged of solely by the common law of Greek construction, no person would ever have disputed the propriety, or rather necessity, of considering the two concluding nouns as referring to one and the same object.”

<sup>172</sup> Quoted by P. Smith.

<sup>173</sup> If the Unitarians insist that both the Father and the Son are intended in these three passages, granting for a moment this were possible, then as an argumentum ad seipsos, all the force of the previous section (4) applies, and we find the conjunction of the names God and Christ, where such association

And lastly,

### **1 John 5**

<sup>20</sup> We are in Him that is true, in His Son Jesus Christ. This [person] is the true God, and eternal life.

“The circumstance which, in my mind, places the matter beyond dispute is, that the same person is here most evidently spoken of as ‘the true God and ETERNAL LIFE.’ It will be granted that a writer is the best interpreter of his own phraseology. Observe, then, the expression which he uses in the beginning of the Epistle. ‘The life was manifested, and we have seen it, and show unto you that ETERNAL LIFE, which was with the Father and was manifested unto us.’ 1 *John* 1:2. In these words it is admitted that the eternal life is a title given to Jesus Christ. Compare, then, the two passages. Is not the conclusion of the Epistle a clear explanation of its beginning?”<sup>174</sup>

I would only ask you to compare with this, the confession of the prophet,

### **Jeremiah 10**

<sup>10</sup> Jehovah is the true God. He is the living God.

And here we have another invincible argument that Jesus Christ is Jehovah, very and eternal God.

This treatise does not profess to enter deeply into a critical examination of the text of the New Testament, but it may be a satisfaction to those whose minds have been disturbed by rash assertions of the uncertainty of manuscripts and versions, to know, that not one of the texts here relied on, is set aside by that learned and eminent man, Dr. Griesbach.<sup>175</sup> To him Unitarians constantly

---

would confound the distinction between the Creator and His creature.

<sup>174</sup> *Wardlaw's Discourses*, p. 59.

<sup>175</sup> On the doctrine before us, Griesbach says: “So numerous and clear are the arguments and the testimonies of Scripture in favor of the true Deity of Christ, that I can hardly imagine how, upon the admission of the Divine authority of Scripture, and with regard to fair rules of interpretation, this doctrine can by any man be called in doubt. Especially the passage, *John* 1:1-3, is so clear, and so superior to all exception, that by no daring efforts of either commentators



appeal. Of him Dr. P. Smith writes:

No man ever devoted, through a long life, such a persevering assiduity of labor to the critical study of the New Testament, and no man has ever so completely united the confidence of all denominations of Christians in the sagacity, judgment, and integrity of his critical decisions.

There are indeed three texts often contended for, which the authority of this distinguished professor precludes my bringing forward as evidence: *1 John* 5:7, he believes to be an interpolation; in *Acts* 20:28, he prefers [Greek word for "Lord"] to [Greek word for "God"]; and in *1 Timothy* 3:16, he would substitute [Greek word for "who"] for [Greek word for "God"].<sup>176</sup>

But to these three texts, that we may not be drawn into needless disputations, I have simply forborne to refer. The argument does not demand them. It is incontrovertible without them. And therefore the inquirer may be certified on the one hand, that if he rejected the positive assertions that Christ is God, the great God our Saviour, in whom dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily, he would be violating those rules of sound common sense which he must apply, to interpret every other classical work; and on the other hand, he may be assured, that in resting on these declarations he is, so far as the most calm and learned scholars can assure him, relying on the very exact meaning of the words intended by those who wrote under the inspiration of the Holy Ghost.

And here, I would pause: and pray the reader to review the impressive strength of that evidence which the word of God has afforded.

Let us remember how earnestly Scripture detaches our ultimate confidence from any creature, and exclusively claims it for the

---

or critics, can it ever be overturned or be snatched out of the hands of the defenders of the truth." Quoted by P. Smith, vol. ii. p. 540.

<sup>176</sup> Thus *1 Timothy* 3:16 would read, "He who was manifested," rather than "God was manifested."

one Infinite Creator: how vivid is the contrast drawn between man and God: how direct are the prohibitions against trusting in man, how express the precepts to rest on God: and moreover how awful is the holy jealousy of the Most High, if any one usurp the incommunicable glories of His name, or intrude upon the claims of His supremacy: so that the first great lesson of spiritual education may be summed up in the words:

**Jeremiah 17**

<sup>7</sup> Blessed is the man that trusts in the Lord, and whose hope the Lord is.

Further let us remember, how confessedly Scripture requires us to repose our ultimate confidence in the Lord Jesus Christ: setting Him before us as possessed of all those incommunicable attributes of Godhead; as our Creator, Preserver, and final Judge; as the hope of fallen man to whom the eye of every believer was directed by prophecy before His first advent; and as the great object of religious trust, a trust claimed by himself when He came into the world, conceded by His followers, and commanded by His inspired apostles: so that the second great lesson of spiritual education may be summed up in the words:

**John 3**

<sup>15</sup> Whosoever believes in the Son of man shall not perish but have eternal life.

Further let us remember, that comparing spiritual things with spiritual, not only does Scripture ascribe to Christ all the attributes of essential Deity and thus, seeing there is one God and none else, establish the unity and equality of the Son with the Father; but moreover, represents the Son as fulfilling towards us all those offices of infinite greatness and goodness which God only can sustain: that the appearances of God Jehovah to the Old Testament saints, combined with the declaration,

**John 1**

<sup>18</sup> No man has seen God at any time,

–are utterly inexplicable on any other hypothesis, and are absolutely decisive when the New Testament assures us, it was the glory of the Lord Jesus they saw:

- that the direct and Divine worship rendered to and received by Christ, in earth and heaven, compels us to acknowledge He is the Lord our God:
- that the name of Jesus Christ is united with that of our heavenly Father in offices where the coalition of the Creator with His creature would blend and confuse the infinite distinction between God and man:
- that, whereas the most sensitive jealousy appears throughout Scripture, of any created being usurping the name of the supreme Creator, inspired interpretations of inspired texts assure us that Jesus Christ is the Eternal, Jehovah of hosts, the Lord our God:
- that as Lord, the one Lord, He requires obedience and is obeyed, claims trust and is trusted, demands adoration and is adored:
- and that finally, He is addressed as God and Lord; that He, the Word, is declared to be God, to be with God in the beginning, to be the Creator of all; that He claims equal honor; that He is over all God blessed for ever; that His righteousness is the righteousness, and His future advent the appearance of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ; and that of Him John declares,

### **1 John 5**

<sup>20</sup> This is the true God, and eternal life.

Let us ponder these things, and reflect how cumulative is this evidence. I earnestly pray that the Divine Spirit may present it with irresistible power to every conscience. If, after weighing the solemn declarations of Jehovah, guarding His own inalienable glories, we had found the essential attributes of Deity assigned in Scripture to Jesus Christ, this would have been an unanswerable argument. If, after considering our miserable condition as lost sinners, we had found that in the matter of eternal salvation, our

hopes are there directed to Jesus as our Saviour, this would have been conclusive evidence, when we remember:

**Isaiah 43**

<sup>11</sup> I am God, and beside me there is no Saviour.

If, leaving this line of proof, we review the appearances of the Lord to the Old Testament saints, this would have been a new and interesting series of demonstrations which would lead us to the same result.

If again, quitting this, we carefully ponder the Divine worship offered to Him, and accepted by Him, this is decisive, when we remember,

**Matthew 4**

<sup>10</sup> You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him only shall you serve.

If, pursuing another path of investigation, we study those Scriptures where, in offices of the highest solemnity the name of Jesus Christ is so united with that of our heavenly Father, that to accept this as the conjunction of the Creator with His creature would confound all distinction between God and man, we are again led irresistibly to the conclusion, that the Godhead of the Father and of the Son is one, the glory equal, and the majesty co-eternal.

If, once more, we see how prophecies regarding God Jehovah are claimed by the New Testament as being fulfilled in Jesus Christ, here is inspired testimony to the supreme Godhead of the Messiah.

And finally, when we find the awful names of God, and Saviour, and Redeemer, and Lord, ascribed to Him again and again in a subject where misdirected faith were idolatry and death, this again is explicit assertion and transparent proof.

I say, the evidence is cumulative. It is not a long elaborate catena, the strength of which is the strength of its weakest link. If the reader thinks any text is inapplicable, let him dismiss it. This

proof rests on hundreds of texts. The whole drift of Scripture, from *Genesis* to *Revelation*, establishes it. It is interwoven with the very texture of the sacred writings. The lines of argument are distinct and independent, and yet, when presented in their collective strength, they are so mutually corroborative, that it seems as if we heard the voice again from heaven saying,

**Mark 9**

<sup>7</sup> This is my beloved Son, hear Him:

—and when we humbly ask,

**John 9**

<sup>36</sup> Who is the Lord, that I might believe in Him?

—and bend a reverential ear to catch the import of the answer, it is this,

**Luke 2**

<sup>11</sup> Unto you is born...a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord,

**Matthew 1** [Isaiah 7:14]

<sup>23</sup> ...Emmanuel,

**Isaiah 9**

<sup>6</sup> ...Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The Father of eternity, The Prince of Peace.

But cordially to embrace this, needs I know the convincing power of the Holy Ghost. I feel my helplessness. I give myself to prayer. The altar is built as once on Carmel, the trench is made, the wood is piled, the sacrifice disposed in order. But it needs the fire from heaven.

“Hear me, O Lord, hear me, glorify your Son that your Son also may glorify You. Reveal your Son to those who seek You.<sup>177</sup> Draw them unto Him.<sup>178</sup> You commanded the light to shine out of darkness: shine in their hearts, in my heart, to give the light of the

---

<sup>177</sup> *Galatians* 1:16.

<sup>178</sup> *John* 6:44.

knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.”<sup>179</sup>

Bear with me, my friends, for giving utterance to prayers which have been long pleaded at the throne of grace. They have not been offered in vain. And when the fire of the Lord falls on any heart, it shall consume the sacrifice, and the wood, and the stones, and the dust: and the deep response of that believing soul shall be,

“My Redeemer, You are the Lord—my Saviour, You are God.”

---

<sup>179</sup> 2 *Corinthians* 4:6.

# 5. The Condescension of Christ

I PROCEED, therefore, to my fourth proposition:

*That Scripture, in the Old and in the New Testament alike,  
presents to us the incarnation and the mission of the Saviour,  
as the extremity of condescension in Jehovah,  
that thereby He might exalt us to everlasting life.*

## 1. The Glory That Christ Set Aside

The Scriptures already cited prove beyond contradiction the co-equal, co-essential, co-eternal Godhead of the Son. And here we have attained that vantage ground from which, I am persuaded, we may most safely with the adoring angels stoop down and look into the humiliation and the humanity of Jesus Christ.<sup>180</sup>

Let us only follow the pathway along which Scripture does as it were lead us by the hand. Let us acknowledge the infinite perfections of Him who is the Alone Supreme Jehovah. Let us confess the infinite demerit of rebellion against Him. Let us admit that He has opened out to us in His word a way of access whereby we, the sinful and the sunken, may be brought nigh to Him, the absolutely Holy and Good One, who is...

### **Habakkuk 1**

<sup>13</sup> ...of purer eyes than to behold evil, and cannot look on iniquity.

Let us remember that this reconciliation is spoken of as a salvation, which to accomplish Omnipotence travels in the greatness of its strength,<sup>181</sup> and which Omniscience declares to have been a mystery hidden in God from the beginning of the world:<sup>182</sup> and that to fulfil this work a wondrous mission we find revealed, in which the Lord God and His Spirit send forth, and the Eternal I AM is the sent One.<sup>183</sup>

---

<sup>180</sup> *1 Peter* 1:12.

<sup>181</sup> *Isaiah* 63:1.

<sup>182</sup> *Romans* 16:25; *Ephesians* 3:9.

<sup>183</sup> *Isaiah* 48:16.

Let us then on the sure testimony of Scripture acknowledge that all the attributes, the honors, and the rights of Jehovah are ascribed to this Sent One,<sup>184</sup> whose name is called Jesus, for He shall save His people from their sins;<sup>185</sup> who claims himself equality with God as His only-begotten Son; and who is associated with God in every supreme office of Deity.

And lastly, let us accept the simple fact, as recorded in the Bible, of Christ's descent from above; that He, the Word, who in the beginning was with God and was God, was made flesh and dwelt among us;<sup>186</sup> that He came down from heaven;<sup>187</sup> that He proceeded forth and came from God,<sup>188</sup> forsaking the glory which He had with the Father before the world was;<sup>189</sup> that being originally in the form of God, He emptied himself, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men:<sup>190</sup> that by universal Creator—by Him incarnate and crucified—it pleased the Godhead to reconcile all things unto himself:<sup>191</sup> that He being the brightness of His Father's glory and the express image of His person,<sup>192</sup> in the bringing many sons of God to glory,<sup>193</sup> forasmuch as the children were partakers of flesh and blood, also himself likewise partook of the same, that through death He might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil, and deliver them who through fear of death, and were all their life subject to bondage.<sup>194</sup>

Now our whole souls are filled with one thought—the condescension of God. Now we shall not be stumbled at passages which

---

<sup>184</sup> *John* 8:18.

<sup>185</sup> *Matthew* 1:21.

<sup>186</sup> *John* 1:1, 14.

<sup>187</sup> *John* 3:13.

<sup>188</sup> *John* 8:42; 17:5.

<sup>189</sup> *John* 17:5.

<sup>190</sup> *Philippians* 2:6-7.

<sup>191</sup> *Colossians* 1:19-20.

<sup>192</sup> *Hebrews* 1:3.

<sup>193</sup> *Hebrews* 2:10.

<sup>194</sup> *Hebrews* 2:14.



speak of the exceeding humiliation to which He stooped. As we assign no limit to the height of His glory, we shall assign none to the depths of His grace. Yea, so far from taking offence at the inferiority of the position which He assumed, the very lowliness of His incarnation and the very degradation of the death He died, will kindle in us a brighter and a more burning gratitude, when we remember that though rich He was, for our sakes He became poor,<sup>195</sup> and that for us, His wayward and wandering sheep, the chief Shepherd offered up himself<sup>196</sup> as the Lamb of God, laying down His life of His own accord, and taking it again to die no more.<sup>197</sup>

## 2. God Manifest in the Flesh

Perhaps to some minds it might have seemed more congruous with the Divine Majesty, supposing it needful for our salvation that God should humble himself at all, that the descent should have been less steep, and the humiliation less lowly. They would have chosen not some little insignificant planet like earth as the scene of His self-abnegation, but some central orb of metropolitan grandeur, and would have gathered the whole intelligent creation as spectators around the splendid arena. They would fain have had Him assume not the body of our abasement but haply an angelic nature, wherein, as some seraph of surpassing brightness, He should have wrought deeds of miraculous beneficence. And chiefly, they would have shunned for Him the ignominy of the cross, and have selected what they deemed some more glorious method of self-sacrifice, whereby He should have paid the price of our redemption. This they would have called a salvation worthy of God.

But surely, as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are the ways of Jehovah higher than our ways and His thoughts than our thoughts.<sup>198</sup> His work is perfect. Let us remember that whatever

---

<sup>195</sup> *2 Corinthians* 8:9.

<sup>196</sup> *Hebrews* 7:27.

<sup>197</sup> *John* 10:17; *Romans* 6:9.

<sup>198</sup> *Isaiah* 55:9.

of material and physical glory we add to the mission of Christ, beyond what is needful for the evidence of that mission, we subtract from its moral and spiritual glory. Between the unapproachable splendors of the Godhead and the lowest forms of created intelligence there are gradations absolutely without number. For the increate Jehovah to have assumed the nature of the highest archangel would have been an infinite descent.

Let us thus far confide with childlike confidence, that herein was manifested omniscient love when God chose the world—to this little world of ours—to be the theatre of the mighty conflict, and sent His only-begotten Son in the likeness of sinful flesh<sup>199</sup> to suffer death upon the cross, and to be the propitiation for our sins.<sup>200</sup>

### **John 1**

<sup>14</sup> The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us.

There is a majestic condescension in these few words that nothing can equal. He was made man.

By himself, by His friends and disciples, by His enemies and persecutors, Jesus Christ was spoken of, as a proper human being. His childhood was adorned with filial affection, and the discharge of filial duty. His intellectual powers, like those of other children, were progressive.<sup>201</sup> In His earliest years, He embraced with eagerness the means of improvement. He had large experience of human suffering. His lot was one of severe labor, poverty, weariness, hunger, and thirst. He affected no austerity of manners, nor did He enjoin it upon His followers.

While He mingled in the common sociability and the innocent festivities of life, He sustained a weight of inward anguish which no mortal could know. He was a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief. He looked forward to the accumulation of suffering which He knew would attend His last hours, with feelings on the rack of agony, with a heart exceedingly sorrowful even unto death, but with a meek and resigned resolution, a tender and

---

<sup>199</sup> *Romans* 8:3.

<sup>200</sup> *1 John* 4:9-10.

<sup>201</sup> *Luke* 2:40-52.

trembling constancy, unspeakably superior in moral grandeur to the stern bravery of the proudest hero.

In his last hours, with a bitterness of soul more excruciating than any bodily sufferings, He cried, "My God, my God, why have You forsaken me!"<sup>202</sup> while yet, He promised heaven to a penitent fellow-sufferer, and died in an act of devotional confidence, triumphing that His work was finished.<sup>203</sup> Thus He died, but rose again, that He might be the Lord of both the dead and living; and He ascended to His Father and our Father, to His God and our God. This was the man Christ Jesus: a man demonstrated from God by miracles, and prodigies, and signs, which God did by Him:<sup>204</sup> a man ordained by God, to be the judge of the living and the dead.<sup>205</sup>

It is delightful to dwell on the character of this unrivalled man: not only because in no other, since the foundation of the world, has the intellectual and moral perfection of our nature been exhibited, but because the contemplation of such excellence refreshes and elevates the mind, and encourages to the beneficial effort of imitation. He always did the things which pleased His heavenly Father. Love, zeal, purity, a perfect acquiescence in the Divine will on every occasion, and the most exalted habits of devotion had their full place and exercise in His mind. The most refined generosity but without affectation or display; mildness, lowliness, tenderness, fidelity, candor, a delicate respect for the feelings as well as the rights and interests of others, prudence, discriminating sagacity, the soundest wisdom, and the noblest fortitude shone from this Son of righteousness with a lustre that never was impaired.<sup>206</sup>

---

<sup>202</sup> *Matthew* 27:46; *Mark* 15:34.

<sup>203</sup> *John* 19:30.

<sup>204</sup> *Acts* 2:22.

<sup>205</sup> *Acts* 17:31.

<sup>206</sup> I make no apology for condensing and abstracting the preceding paragraphs from the profound treatise of Dr. Pye Smith, to which I have frequently referred, on *Scripture Testimony to the Messiah* (vol. ii., p. 334-337). Permit me to take this opportunity of urging any who need a calm and candid investigation of this momentous subject, to study his noble apology for our faith. Most thankful should I be, if my humble essay formed the stepping-stone which should lead any to that truly great work.

Believe me, we yield to none in the strength of conviction with which we hold to the humanity of Jesus Christ.

### **John 1**

<sup>14</sup> The Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us.

We take our stand fearlessly on this. This unlocks all those texts on which Unitarians are wont to insist, asserting the inferiority and subordination of the Son of Man to the Father. We do not hide these truths. We do not gloss them over. We do not explain them away. They are essential to our faith. As combined with the revelations of His essential Godhead, they form that inimitable grace which is our salvation. The foot of the ladder must rest on earth, as the top of it reaches to heaven.<sup>207</sup>

If our doctrine is the truth, that there subsist in the essence of One Jehovah, three who are called the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, co-equal and co-eternal; and that it is the design of the Father, and the will of the Son, with the consenting pleasure of the Holy Spirit, that the Son, for the recovery of fallen man, should empty himself, not of His Godhead, which were impossible, but of His glory, and take our human nature into mysterious union with his Divine nature, so that God and man make one Christ: if this is spoken of in Scripture as the extremity of Divine condescension, and humiliation, devised and accomplished, that hereby guilty men might have a medium of access to the Holy Deity,—or rather foregoing abstract terms, that we might have a mediator between us and God, one with God by reason of his eternal essence, one with us by reason of the humanity He deigned to assume: how otherwise could such a relationship have been expressed than in such or such like words:

### **1 Timothy 2**

<sup>5</sup> There is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;

<sup>6</sup> Who gave himself a ransom for all.

---

<sup>207</sup> *Genesis 28:12; John 1:51.*

Or how could such a salvation be described than:

**John 17**

<sup>3</sup> This is life eternal, that they should know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom You have sent.

Looking forward, as the man Christ Jesus, to His translation from this world of suffering to the glory of His Father's throne, (remember He had emptied himself, taken upon Him the form of a servant, humbled himself—if these words mean anything, they imply a spontaneous descent from the higher to the lower,) how otherwise could He describe His return from that present estate of afflicted humanity, than in such or such like words:

**John 14**

<sup>28</sup> If you loved me you would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.

Having descended with the express design of doing His Father's pleasure, of serving a perfect service, of rendering a spotless obedience to the law, of exhibiting a Divine model of self-denial; how otherwise could He declare His mission than in these or similar terms:

**John 6**

<sup>38</sup> I came down from heaven not to do my own will, but the will of Him that sent me.

Standing forth, the author and finisher of the faith,<sup>208</sup> the exemplar of that faith we are to copy; AS MAN working His miracles not by virtue of His Divinity ever inherent in Him, but by virtue of a perfect faith in the power of the Father; that faith which with us is intermittent and often overborne, being with Him constant without defect, and victorious without defeat; how otherwise could He reveal the secret and entire dependence of His soul on God, than in language such as this:

**John 5**

<sup>30</sup> I can of my own self do nothing.

---

<sup>208</sup> *Hebrews 12:2.*

## John 14

<sup>10</sup> The Father that dwells in me, He does the works.

### 3. Humanity and Divinity Combined

These passages affirm His proper humanity, and His humble mission as a servant. This humanity we assert as strongly, this mission we believe as verily as yourselves. All that faith requires is to act upon the great principle of comparing spiritual things with spiritual; and, wherever we find any assertion of His subordination as man, if we can place by its side a parallel assertion of His supremacy as God, faith demands nothing more. Often, the immediate context will supply the corrective, and adjust the balance. If not, we shall never consult in vain the whole counsel of the lively oracles<sup>209</sup> of God.

Thus in the Old Testament, as man the heel of the seed of the woman is bruised: as God He achieves a victory surpassing human strength, He bruises the serpent's head.<sup>210</sup>

Against Him as man, we read in the 2<sup>nd</sup> *Psalm*, the kings of the earth set themselves: to Him as the Anointed Son of God, Divine royalty is ascribed and universal trust attracted.<sup>211</sup>

As man He appears at the close of the 110<sup>th</sup> *Psalm*, like a weary traveler, drinking of the wayside brook and revived therewith: but the opening verses described Him as the victorious Lord of all on the throne with Jehovah.

If you regard His humanity,

#### Isaiah 9

<sup>6</sup> Unto us a child is born:

—if you regard His Deity, His name is...

<sup>6</sup> ...the Mighty God.

As David's son, He is the...

---

<sup>209</sup> *Acts* 7:38.

<sup>210</sup> *Genesis* 3:15.

<sup>211</sup> *Psalm* 2:2, 7, 12.

## Isaiah 11

<sup>1</sup> ...rod out of the stem of Jesse:

–as David’s Lord,

<sup>4</sup> ...He shall smite the earth with the rod of His mouth, and with the breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked.

In respect of His manhood...

## Isaiah 53

<sup>2</sup> He grows up as a tender plant,...

<sup>3</sup> ...despised and rejected:

–in virtue of His Godhead He bears...

<sup>6</sup> ...the iniquity of us all,

<sup>5</sup> ...and with His stripes we are healed.

As man He is the pierced smitten shepherd:<sup>212</sup> as God He is Jehovah’s fellow.<sup>213</sup>

And when we come to the New Testament, the evidence is yet more abundant. Space forbids to do more than place side by side, with a very few remarks, those Scriptures which reveal the characteristics of His manhood and His Godhead. Those on the left hand will record His functionary subordination as man; those on the right His essential supremacy as God:

I came down from heaven not to do my own will, but the will of Him that sent me. <i>John 6:38</i>	Father, I will. <i>John 17:24</i> Lord if You will, You can make me clean. . . . “I will.” <i>Matthew 8:2-3</i>
---	---

His will, therefore, as man, was subjected to that of His Father: as God, was ever in perfect harmony with His Father’s will, but was self-existent, free, efficacious.

---

<sup>212</sup> *Zechariah 12:10.*

<sup>213</sup> *Zechariah 13:7.*

<p>Of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. <i>Mark 13:32</i></p>	<p>The Father shows the Son all things that He does. <i>John 5:20</i>  As the Father knows me even so know I the Father. <i>John 10:15</i>  Lord, You know all things. <i>John 21:17</i></p>
--	--

Just as we read, Jesus increased in wisdom,<sup>214</sup> and therefore there were subjects unknown to Him at twelve years of age, which were acquired by Him or revealed to Him afterwards: so in *Mark 13:32*, Jesus is speaking in His human nature. This point was not made known to Him as man, by the Spirit. And since His manhood is spoken of as a condition of His prophetic office,<sup>215</sup> He is declaring as an ambassador, what lay within His commission, and this day and hour He was not empowered, as Prophet, to reveal.<sup>216</sup> The contrast verses sufficiently prove He shared the infinite counsels of his Father, comprehended the Incomprehensible, and is himself Omniscient.

<p>I go unto the Father, for my Father is greater than I. <i>John 14:28</i></p>	<p>Making himself equal with God. <i>John 5:18</i>. With our Lord's consequent discourse, vs. 19-29 (See p. 115)</p>
---	--

Inferiority of rank as man, as mediator, as the apostle and servant of His Father,—having for us spontaneously stooped from the throne of His glory,—is asserted in the first quotation: equal-

<sup>214</sup> *Luke 2:52*.

<sup>215</sup> *Deuteronomy 18:15*, "...of your brethren."

<sup>216</sup> "The variety of the movements of the soul of Christ is admirable. Sometimes He had a high sense, so that He hardly seemed to remember that He was a man walking on the earth; sometimes He had a low sense, so that He could almost seem to have forgotten that He was the Lord from heaven. And for the present He is always accustomed to speak just as He who was one with the Father; just so again, as if it were the only condition in which all all holy men are. Often these two are controlled in a wonderful variety of ways. In this place He speaks humbly, and moderates the sense of His own glory, which He brought to the discourse of judgment." *Bengel*. (PP Editor's note: this footnote was originally written in Latin. I ran it through a translate program, but the last few sentences did not make sense, so I truncated the footnote).



ity of nature as to cooperation, self-existence, infinite knowledge, universal trust, is proved in the second.

The very texts which most strongly declare the humanity of Jesus, are sufficient, as Coleridge somewhere observes, to refute those who from them would deny His Deity. How could a mere man without absurd presumption, solemnly announce that God the Father was greater than He? How could He be made flesh? How it be a proof of His humility that He was made in the likeness of man.

This may be the fittest opportunity to say a few words on the answer of Christ to the ruler,

**Matthew 19**

<sup>17</sup> Why do you call me good? There is none good but one, that is God: but if you will enter into life, keep the commandments.

This young man, coming to Christ and exclaiming,

<sup>16</sup> Good teacher, what good thing shall I do that I may have eternal life?

—manifestly only recognized Him as a human teacher, as such, called Him good; nay put his own good works on the same level of merit. The Lord refused such homage. It was founded on false assumptions. Its acceptance would have strengthened a yet unhumbled self-righteousness.

<sup>17</sup> Why, [he asked,] why do you call me good?

The stress is on the “why.” The answer to that “why,” would discover an unsuspected depth of self-ignorance. But the Lord proceeded to probe the young man’s heart, and tried him by the second table of the law wherein he rested. The ruler was found wanting. We know not his after-history: but thus, at least, one barrier was broken down which, unremoved, must have ever kept him from confessing his need of an atonement for sin, from imploring the advocacy of Jesus Christ the righteous, and from

trusting in the perfect goodness of Him before whom, unconsciously, he then knelt, Jehovah our righteousness. But to resume.

To sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, except to those for whom it is prepared of my Father. <i>Matthew 20:23</i>	To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with me in my throne. <i>Revelation 3:21</i>
--	---

The translation given above of our Lord’s reply to Salome simply omits the words which are not in the original.<sup>217</sup> The promise to the church of Laodicea sufficiently proves that in respect of heavenly dignities, Jesus Christ does as He wills with His own.

God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son. <i>John 3:16</i>	Christ also loved the Church, and gave himself for her. <i>Ephesians 5:25</i>
It pleased the Lord to bruise Him; He has put Him to grief: when You shall make His soul an offering for sin. <i>Isaiah 53:10</i>	I lay down my life that I might take it again. No one takes it from me. I have power <sup>218</sup> to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. <i>John 10:17-18.</i>
Whom God has raised up, having loosed the pains of death. <i>Acts 2:24</i>	Destroy this temple (His body), and in three days I will raise it up. <i>John 2:19.</i>
He (the Father of glory) set Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality and power. <i>Ephesians 1:20-21</i>	He ascended up on high, He led captivity captive. <i>Ephesians 4:8</i> Having spoiled principalities and powers, He made a show of them openly. <i>Colossians 2:15</i>

In these passages you will observe that, on the one hand, the death, resurrection, and ascension of Jesus as man, being subordi-

<sup>217</sup> Cf. Scholefield’s “Hints,” and Alford; and for construction compare precisely similar idiom in the previous chapter, verse 11, where it is properly translated “save.”

<sup>218</sup> Unitarians object to [the Greek word] being here translated “power,” (they would prefer “authority,”) but it is so rendered of the Father’s power, *Luke 12:5; Acts 1:7*; and as they would add *Jude 25*. The previous clause declares the spontaneity of the gift.

nate to the Father and at His disposal, are said to have taken place at His Father's ordination: while on the other hand, as God, Christ gives himself, raises himself, ascends in His own might, and as the King of glory, the Lord of hosts mighty in battle, enters the everlasting doors.

<p>And now, Lord...grant...that signs and wonders may be done by the name of your holy child Jesus. <i>Acts 4:29-30.</i></p>	<p>Eneas, Jesus Christ makes you whole. <i>Acts 9:34</i></p>
--	--

If the first exalts the Father; the second, as distinctly, exalts the Son as the immediate Author of miraculous healing.

<p>Forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake has forgiven you. <i>Ephesians 4:32</i></p>	<p>Forgiving one another, even as Christ forgave you. <i>Colossians 3:13</i></p>
---	--

Now the Father, now the Son, is referred to as the first cause of forgiveness.

<p>To us (there is but) one God the Father, of whom are all things, and we unto Him. <i>1 Corinthians 8:6</i></p>	<p>And one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by Him. <i>1 Corinthians 8:6</i></p>
---	---

On this, Dr. P. Smith says,

“Lord” is not put as a designation secondary and inferior to God. It attributes dominion; and the extent of the dominion must be according to the nature of the case in any given instance. Is there anything, then, in this case to direct our conception? Yes: all things are “by Him,” or “through Him,” as their immediate and efficient Cause. The identical phrase is used, which is twice by the same writer employed with regard to the Eternal Father (*Romans 11:36; Hebrews 2:10*): by whom are all things.

Myself believing the reference to be to *Deuteronomy 6:4*, as stated p. 110-111, no proof could be stronger than this of the Divine supremacy of the Messiah. But at all events, the Deity of

Christ can no more be denied because the Father is here called the “One God,” than the dominion of the Father can be denied because the Son is called the “One Lord.”<sup>219</sup>

You are Christ's: and Christ is God's. <i>1 Corinthians 3:23</i>	I am in the Father and the Father in me. <i>John 14:10</i>
The head of Christ is God. <i>1 Corinthians 11:3</i>	He [the Son] is the head of the body, the church. <i>Colossians 1:18</i>
Then comes the end, when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father,... <i>1 Corinthians 15:24</i>	Of His [Christ's] kingdom there shall be no end. <i>Luke 1:33</i> The everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. <i>2 Peter 1:11</i>

<sup>219</sup> There are two other passages to which Unitarians sometimes refer, but the deduction they draw from them is, in each case, refuted by the context.

(1) “The first-born of all creation,” *prototokos pas ktisis*, or “of the whole creation.” *Colossians 1:15*.

But the apostle continues, verse 16: “For by Him were all things created.” If you regard the word *first-born* in its general acceptation among Eastern nations, it imports lordship, excellence, dignity; and as such the clause might well have been translated here, “The chief of all creation.”

But if you press for a more exact significance, it absolutely resists the interpretation that Christ is himself a creation of God, for then it would have been *first created*, as Chrysostom observes (see Scott), not *first born*. The (-*tokos*) guards this, and the *proto-*, so far from assuming Him to be the *first* creature, declares His pre-existent priority to all creation, according to the well-known Greek usage of the superlative for the comparative, (see *John 1:15*), *en protos mu*, “for He was before me:” and the clause might have been rendered by that in our version of the Athanasian creed. “Begotten before the worlds.” Thus the phrase by itself is an unambiguous testimony to His Deity: and the succeeding clauses, ascribing to Him the creation of all, prove Him increate; for, if a creature, He made himself, which is absurd.

(2) “The beginning (*arche*) of the creation of God.” *Revelation 3:14*.

Compare with this “I am, says the Lord, the beginning and the end (*arche kai telos*).” *Revelation 1:8, 21:6, 22:13*.

The above comprise all the instances of the use of *arche* in the Apocalypse, and sufficiently prove that, as used in *Revelation 3:14*, it regards the pre-existent eternity, the “from everlasting” of the Lord, and as such declares Him to be the beginning, or origin, or originator, or precisely as we say, *the First Cause* of the creation of God.

<p>Then shall the Son also himself be subject unto Him that put all things under Him, that God maybe all in all. <i>1 Corinthians 15:28</i></p>	<p>Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever. . . . You are the same. . . . Sit on my right hand. <i>Hebrews 1:8, 12, 13</i>          Christ is all and in all.  <i>Colossians 3:11.</i></p>
---	---

From these passages, on the one side, we learn that Jesus Christ as the second Man, the federal Head of his church, in ascending to our God and Father has ascended to His God and Father: and that as our surety He does His Father's will: and that a time will come when He will no longer exercise His mediatorial office, by pleading the virtue of His blood for penitent sinners (seeing that sin and death are forever abolished): but as the Representative of us, His blood-bought children, (for the memory of His dying love shall never fade throughout eternity,) will keep His Father's commandments and abide in His love, and that thus forever and forever Jehovah shall fill the universe with the unclouded effulgence of His everlasting name and essence, LOVE.

On the other hand, we learn that Christ and His Father are one, that He has a real and undivided supremacy, that His kingdom shall never wax old, His glory never pale, His royalty never pass away; and that for the endless ages of immortality in heaven and earth the manifestation of the love of God shall be through Him, who is the brightness of His Father's glory, and is seated on the right hand of the Majesty on high.

I append only one couplet more, for the same principle applies to all the passages which have been, or can be, brought forward to prove the subordination of the Son.

<p>In the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain. <i>Revelation 5:6</i></p>	<p>A pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.  <i>Revelation 22:1</i></p>
--	--

Do you gather from the first passage that in Christ glorified there are ineffaceable traces of Jesus and Him crucified? From the

last you learn that the perennial and transparent stream of felicity—the joy of the Holy Ghost—flows equally and coordinately from the eternal Father and the eternal Son.

I have now, I believe, brought forward the principal of those passages on which Unitarians rely. Is there anything in any one of them, or in all collectively, to prevent our reposing supreme confidence in Jesus Christ? Do they rebuke our absolute dependence upon Him? Do they warn us against loving Him with every affection of our soul?

The Scriptures adduced in the last two chapters, brought before us One of such Divine perfections, that if He were not God, not the object of supreme reliance, we should at least have needed a caveat every few lines:

“Are you tempted to worship Him? See you do it not. Though the instrument, He is not the author of eternal salvation. Though Godlike, He is not God. Though wearing vice-regal honors, He is not king. Be on your guard. Control your feelings. Curb your affections. Moderate your admiration. Keep your trust in check. He is only a creature after all. Beware of idolatry: and again I say, beware!”

Now I ask, do the passages affirming His subordination as man, contain that caveat? or anything like such a warning? or any, even the faintest intimation of the possibility of loving Him too much, or trusting in Him too entirely? You must confess they do not.

Yea more, as you stoop down and look into these mysteries of His humiliation, they touch deeper and deeper springs within you, they awaken the finer sensibilities of your nature, and when you believe that He, who was in the form of God, emptied himself for you, and took upon Him the form of a servant, confidence and affection alike reach a standard that nothing can transcend. You trust Him, you love Him, you adore Him supremely, for that ex-

ceeding great and costly love wherewith He loved you and gave himself for you.<sup>220</sup>

And now every generous feeling within you brands it as the basest ingratitude to allege these proofs of His humanity in disproof of His Deity, to trample on His lowliness that you may pluck the diadem from His brow, and to find cause in the true sympathy of Him who was in all points tempted like as we are, and touched with the feeling of our infirmities, for denying the excellence of that glory which He had with the Father before the world was.

If a sick and suffering prisoner in Newgate, nursed, and tended, and taught, by the philanthropic Howard, had argued from the self-devotion of that noble man spending long hours in the loathsome cell, that he could not possess a princely mansion, and a fortune of his own; and even if he had reproached that ministering angel saying,

“You must surely be a wretched convict like myself”

—we might pity his infatuation and pardon his ingratitude: but can we forgive ourselves, if we deliberately select the instances of our Lord’s lowest humiliation and cast them in His teeth, as proving that He never dwelt from eternity in the light that no man can approach unto, nor inhabited from everlasting that shrine of unfathomable delights, the bosom of His Father? Let us beware, my friends, and remember the solemn warning of Jesus,

#### **Matthew 21**

<sup>44</sup> Whosoever shall fall on this stone [himself in prostrate humility] shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall [himself returning in glory], it will grind him to powder.

### **4. Humanity Exalted Through Christ**

The Word was made flesh. O wondrous humiliation of the Creator! But this is not all.

---

<sup>220</sup> *Galatians 2:20.*

## John 1

<sup>11</sup> He came, and as many as received Him, to them gave He power to become the sons of God.

O wondrous exaltation of us His creatures! They are two mysteries, of which the second is only less marvellous than the first. He, the Infinite One, stooped to the extremity of woe that He might elevate us to the highest life which a created being can enjoy—the life of God. And this explains another series of truths, which I blush for myself and for human nature to confess once troubled my peace, and is I know at the present moment darkening the faith of many: I mean the exalted expressions which Scripture contains of our privileges in Christ.

What argument, UNBELIEF SUGGESTS, can you draw from the infinite mutual love of the Father and the Son, when Jesus says,

## John 15

<sup>9</sup> As the Father loved me, *so have I loved you?*

Or from the infinite knowledge possessed by the Son of the Father, when He says,

## Matthew 11

<sup>27</sup> No one knows the Father save the Son, *and he to whom the Son will reveal Him?*

Or from the Son being the express image of His person,<sup>221</sup> when it is said,

## 2 Corinthians 3

<sup>18</sup> *We are changed into the same image from glory to glory?*

Or from His Divine nature as the Son of God, when *we are joint heirs with Him*<sup>222</sup> *who is the first-born among many brethren,*<sup>223</sup> *and are ourselves partakers of a Divine nature?*<sup>224</sup>

Or from His words,

---

<sup>221</sup> Hebrews 1:3.

<sup>222</sup> Romans 8:17.

<sup>223</sup> Romans 8:29.

<sup>224</sup> 2 Peter 1:4.



**John 10**

<sup>30</sup> I and my Father are one,

–when He prays for His people,

**John 17**

<sup>22</sup> ...*that they may be one even as we are one?*

Or from His own mighty miracles, when He promises His faithful disciple,

**John 14**

<sup>12</sup> *Greater works than these (of mine) shall he do?*

Or from His session on the eternal throne, when He says, *we shall share His throne?*<sup>225</sup>

Or from His saying,

**John 14**

<sup>9</sup> He that has seen me has seen the Father:

–when He also says,

**Luke 10**

<sup>16</sup> *He that hears you hears me?*

Or from His assurance,

**John 10**

<sup>15</sup> As the Father knows me, even so know I the Father,

–when Paul says in the confidence of faith,

**1 Corinthians 13**

<sup>12</sup> ...*then shall I know even as I am known?*

Or from the infinite comprehension implied in the words,

**John 5**

<sup>20</sup> The Father shows the Son all things that He does,

–when Jesus says,

---

<sup>225</sup> *Revelation 3:21.*

**John 15**

<sup>15</sup> *All things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you?*

Or from the name of Jesus,

**John 4**

<sup>42</sup> The Saviour of the world,

**Matthew 1**

<sup>21</sup> ...[who] shall save His people from their sins,

–when, among the Old Testament saints we find there were *saviours who saved them*;<sup>226</sup> when Paul says,

**1 Corinthians 9**

<sup>22</sup> *I became all things to all men that I might by all means save some;*

–and when James avers,

**James 5**

<sup>20</sup> *He that converts a sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death?*

Or from the express definition,

**John 1**

<sup>1</sup> ...the Word was God:

–when Christ declares,

**John 10**

<sup>35</sup> *He called them gods to whom the word of God came?*

Or from the solemn affirmation,

**Colossians 2**

<sup>9</sup> In Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily,

–when Scripture records the prayer,

**Ephesians 3**

<sup>19</sup> *That you might be filled even to all the fullness of God?*

---

<sup>226</sup> *Nehemiah 9:27.*

O base unbelief! O hateful suspicion! If I have done wrong in giving consistent expression to thoughts which have been flung as fiery darts against the shield of faith, the Lord pardon His servant in this thing!

But the answer is conclusive, and the suggestion unanswered may rankle in many breasts. I do not now insist on the exceeding ingratitude of the return—to take advantage of the infinite love of Christ and say,

“The believer is advanced to so high a dignity, and is admitted to such Divine delights, there can surely be no difference between him and the eternal Son of God;”

—but, I ask,

“What says the Scripture to this objection of the glories of Christ, and of His redeemed, being from time to time described in apparently similar terms?”

In the first place most of the attributes and names of Christ are never predicated of His people: they are His own essential prerogatives: they are incommunicable.

Then if we take up one by one, those passages whose force is thought to be neutralized by the corresponding privileges of saints, we shall see how, in each case, the privilege of the believer is derived from Christ, or from the Father through Christ, (the context compelling this,) and is limited by the finite capacity of the creature; while the supereminent glory of Christ is either un-derived, eternal, increate,—or, if given, is expressly given to Him in His subordinate character as Mediator.

And, lastly, no pretension of trust in any saint or saints is founded on the privileges conferred on Him or them in the Gospel.

As to the first point, you may easily verify it for yourself, by referring to chapters 3 and 4. Where is any saint said to be the only-begotten Son of God, the First and the Last, from everlast-

ing, the same yesterday, today, and for ever, omnipresent, omniscient, infinitely good, the creator and preserver of all things, the chief shepherd of the flock, the one master and lord, the bridegroom of the bride, Jehovah? Nowhere. Therefore setting these disputed passages aside for a while, even without them the proof remains incontrovertible.

Secondly, let us examine this alleged similarity more closely. But to deprecate a hasty conclusion from a bare resemblance of words, I would remind you, there are a few instances in Scripture in which the same phrase denotes a prerogative of the Supreme Father, and a privilege of His believing child. Thus we find,

**Matthew 19**

<sup>26</sup> With God all things are possible.

And again,

**Mark 9**

<sup>23</sup> All things are possible to him that believes.

Would you, because of the of the sameness of the terms employed, deny the omnipotence or ascribe omnipotence to the believer? Again,

**Matthew 5**

<sup>48</sup> Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father in heaven is perfect.

Would you, because of the perfection of the saint, deny the infinite goodness of the Father; or because of the absolute perfection of the Father, ascribe illimitable goodness to the saint? Here, indeed,

**Proverbs 14**

<sup>6</sup> Knowledge is easy to him that understands.

Let us, however, proceed to examine them:

The Father loves the Son, and has given all things unto His hands. He	As the Father has loved me, so have I loved you: continue in my love. If
---	--

that believes on the Son has everlasting life. <i>John</i> 3:35-36	you keep my commandments, you shall abide in my love. <i>John</i> 15:9-10
--	---

In the first quotation, supreme authority is assigned to Christ, as the heir of all things for His Church; and the trust of mankind centers on Him. In the second, He is urging His disciples as defective beings, by the plea of the infinite fullness of His love towards them, infinite so far as regarded himself, to abide in that love from which without Him they would assuredly fall, “for without me,” as He had just said,

**John 15**

<sup>5</sup> ...you can do nothing.

All things are delivered unto me of my Father, and no one knows the Son but the Father; neither knows any one the Father, save the Son... <i>Matthew</i> 11:27	...and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal Him. <i>Matthew</i> 11:27
---	---

The first part is again accompanied by the declaration of the Son’s unlimited inheritance of all things. The second is qualified by the previous assertion that these things were revealed to babes,<sup>227</sup> and their finite knowledge of the Father is granted through the Son, as the efficient cause.

The express image of His person. <i>Hebrews</i> 1:3	Changed into the same image. <i>2 Corinthians</i> 3:18
--	---

The first clause is extracted from that chapter which so illustriously proves the Godhead of Christ. The second refers all the transformation to the view of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ,<sup>228</sup> revealed progressively by the Lord, the Spirit.

Unto which of the angels said He at	<sup>14</sup> ...sons of God.
-------------------------------------	-------------------------------

<sup>227</sup> *Matthew* 11:25.

<sup>228</sup> *2 Corinthians* 4:6.

any time: You are my Son, this day have I begotten You? <i>Hebrews</i> 1:5	<sup>17</sup> ...joint heirs with Christ. <sup>29</sup> ...the firstborn among many brethren. <i>Romans</i> 8:14,17, 29
--	--

We have here another testimony to Christ, which connects it-self with all those passages affirming that in a sense peculiar to himself He is the Son of God; standing forth as the Son, the only-begotten of the Father,<sup>229</sup> the Son of His love,<sup>230</sup> His own Son,<sup>231</sup> the Son of the living God,<sup>232</sup> the Son of the Blessed,<sup>233</sup> the Son of the Highest.<sup>234</sup>

From a cursory glance into the 8<sup>th</sup> of *Romans*, we see how infinite the difference between that essential Sonship, and our privileges, as adopted sons, which are only ours in Christ; and thus it is, as Peter writes, through the righteousness of our God and Saviour, Jesus Christ, through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord, that we become partakers of a (not *the*) Divine nature.<sup>235</sup>

I and my Father are one. <i>John</i> 10:30	That they may be one even as we are one. <i>John</i> 17:22
--	--

On the first, hangs the security of the church universal, which is safe, whether held in His hand, or, to vary the aspect of truth, held in His Father's hand; equally safe, for He and His Father are one in essence, power, operation, and will. From the second, we learn how intimate is the union of the saints with each other, and the Lord; but, unutterably glorious as are the privileges besought by Christ for His people in that sublime prayer, they all flow equally from the Father, and from himself (vs. 3) as the one fountain of eternal life.

---

<sup>229</sup> *John* 1:14.  
<sup>230</sup> *Colossians* 1:13.  
<sup>231</sup> *Romans* 8:32.  
<sup>232</sup> *Matthew* 16:16.  
<sup>233</sup> *Mark* 14:61.  
<sup>234</sup> *Luke* 1:32.  
<sup>235</sup> *2 Peter* 1:4.

The works that I do, in my Father's name, bear witness of me. <i>John 10:25</i>	Greater works than these shall he do. <i>John 14:12</i>
---	---

In the former, the works are appealed to as proof of His right to be the Shepherd of His flock, and the Messiah of Israel. In the latter, all the miracles, as He had just stated, are wrought by faith in Him,

**John 14**

<sup>12</sup> He that believes on me, the works that I do shall he do also.

To the Son He says, Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever. <i>Hebrews 1:8</i>	To him that overcomes will I grant to sit with me in my throne. <i>Revelation 3:21</i>
--	--

It only needs the collation of the verses, to see the immeasurable difference between the universal supremacy belonging of right to Christ for ever, and the favor granted by Him to His people of reigning with Him.

He that has seen me has seen the Father. <i>John 14:9</i>	He that hears you hears me. <i>Luke 10:16</i>
---	---

The first explains, how knowledge of himself embraces knowledge of the Father, and vindicates His claim to be “the way, and the truth, and the life.”<sup>236</sup> The second clothes His messengers with an ambassador's official authority, as speaking *in loco regis*.<sup>237</sup>

As the Father knows me, even so know I the Father. <i>John 10:15</i>	Then shall I know even as also I am known. <i>1 Corinthians 13:12</i>
--	---

The good Shepherd, who is to know thoroughly all His sheep, needs omniscience; this, the first proves. From the second, we are assured that in heaven our knowledge will be not fragmentary as

---

<sup>236</sup> *John 14:6.*

<sup>237</sup> “in the king's place.”

here, but *so far as it extends*, will resemble Christ's knowledge of us, being perfect, symmetrical, unperplexed.

The Father shows the Son all things that He does. <i>John 5:20</i>	All things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you. <i>John 15:15</i>
--	--

The first is accompanied (see [p. 115](#)) with every Divine claim. The second is qualified by the quickly succeeding assurance,

**John 16**

<sup>12</sup> I have yet many things to say unto you, but you cannot bear them now.

Christ, the Saviour of the world. <i>John 4:42</i>	You gave them saviours, who saved them. <i>Nehemiah 9:27</i>
Jesus, who delivered us from the wrath to come. <i>1 Thessalonians 1:10</i>	He that converts a sinner...shall save a soul from death. <i>James 5:20</i>

It needs only a glance at the parallel passages, ([page 80](#), No. 20,) to see how infinite is the difference between Him who stands forth emphatically as the Author of eternal salvation, and those who were deliverers of their country from oppression, or were instruments as the ministers of Jesus Christ in the salvation of souls.

The Word was God. <i>John 1:1</i>	He called them gods, to whom the word of God came. <i>John 10:35</i>
-----------------------------------	--

In the first, the context compels us to understand (*Deos*) God, when applied to the Word, in the same sense as when immediately before and after applied to the Father: the Word is essentially God, the Creator of all. The second, conceding indeed that there is a lower sense in which men were sometimes officially *called* gods, (though the passage adduced marks their mortality—



they shortly die like other men,<sup>238</sup>) contrasts with this the Divine Sonship of the Messiah.

In Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. <i>Colossians</i> 2:9	That you might be filled even to all the fullness of God. <i>Ephesians</i> 3:19
---	---

The first affirms the incarnate Godhead of Christ as the One in whom (see next clause, vs. 10,) we are complete, for He is the head of all principality and power. The second (somewhat obscured by the received translation) imports that we may be filled “each in our degree and to the utmost bound of our finite capacity, even as God is full, with Divine goodness:” and this again flows from our knowledge of the illimitable love of Christ.

The difficulties, when fairly tried by the context in each case, crumble into dust; and the formidable line of objections founded on them melt like embankments of snow, when exposed to the full light of other Scriptures which assert the true Godhead of the Son. But now, I ask,

“Do these contrasted truths divert us from reposing supreme trust in Jesus Christ? Do they, even so far as this, confuse our confidence, by setting up any other as the recipient of equal honor?”

Because the saints are loved with Divine love, know God, are changed into His image, are called His sons, are made one with the Father and with Christ, work mighty works by His power, are raised to Christ’s throne, shall hereafter possess a perfect knowledge, are made acquainted with the mysteries of Gospel grace, may even officially be called gods, and what is a far higher privilege, be filled with all Divine goodness,—is any claim set up on their behalf for trust or worship?

Gather together all the privileges of Christians here set forth; entwine them into one radiant crown; place that crown, as you are perfectly warranted in doing, upon the head of some eminent

---

<sup>238</sup> *Psalm* 82:6-7.

saint, Peter, or Paul, or John, or upon the head of the Church Catholic, the Bride, is there in all these lustrous glories any temptation held out to confide in absolutely, or supremely to love that saint or that church?

We acknowledge the extremity of abasement to which Jesus descended. We believe the summit of glory to which He will raise His people. We accept the simple declarations of Scripture with regard to both these facts. But for a man to take his stand alternately on the lowest step of Christ's humiliation, and on the highest step of His children's exaltation, and thence to deny the Supreme Deity of Him who stooped so low that He might draw us up so high, seems an ingratitude of which our dealings with our fellow-men afford no parallel.

We referred before to the opening of the *Epistle to the Ephesians*<sup>239</sup>—Scripture does not contain a more rich exhibition of those things which are ours in Christ: now if Paul had closed that chapter by arrogating Christ-like honors or Christ-like homage to himself and his brethren, there would have been some ground for alarm that the dignities of His people were eclipsing the supremacy of their Lord. How different is the spirit breathed through his glowing prayer:

### **Ephesians 1**

<sup>17</sup> That the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of Him:

<sup>18</sup> The eyes of your understanding being enlightened that you may know what is the hope of His calling, and what the riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints,

<sup>19</sup> And what is the exceeding greatness of His power toward us who believe, according to the working of His mighty power,

<sup>20</sup> Which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and set Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places,

---

<sup>239</sup> See p. 63.

<sup>21</sup> Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come:

<sup>22</sup> And has put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be the head over all things to the church,

<sup>23</sup> Which is His body, the fullness of Him that fills all in all.

Behold, the Son is on the everlasting throne: and we are under His feet. Moved indeed, by Divine compassion, He once forsook that throne, and came forth from the bosom of His Father, that He might gather together the children of God which are scattered abroad, and present them as one family before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy.

Is your trust weakened in Him because of His exceeding humiliation? or do you think the less of Him for the glory to which He elevates His people? Nay, verily: gratitude can find no words to express itself when we believe on Him who, being over all, God blessed for ever,<sup>240</sup> partook of our flesh and blood, and now seated far above all principality and power, is not ashamed to call us brethren.<sup>241</sup>

---

<sup>240</sup> *Romans* 9:5.

<sup>241</sup> *Hebrews* 2:11.

## 6. The Divinity of the Holy Spirit

**A**ND now I would state my next proposition, and briefly sketch the testimony on which it rests.

*That Scripture in the Old and the New Testament alike  
proves the co-equal Godhead of the Holy Spirit  
with that of the Father and of the Son.*

May the same Spirit grant us reverence, and humility, and Godly fear in this solemn inquiry!

The reader will not fail to observe what strong collateral evidence of the possible plurality in unity, and therefore of the possible co-equal Deity of the Father and of the Son, we shall obtain, if another be revealed in Scripture;

- as one who is to be distinguished from the Father and the Son;
- as one to whom such personal properties and actions are assigned as prove independent and intelligent personality;
- as one to whom Divine attributes are ascribed, and by whom Divine offices are exercised;
- as one worshiped in parity with the Father and the Son;
- as one declared to be Jehovah and God.

Here, indeed, we might expect the evidence to be more subjective: for the peculiar office of the Holy Ghost in the economy of redemption, is ever represented as the quickening and fostering of the hidden life within. It is, however, none the less conclusive.

If, as we gaze on the sun shining in the firmament, we see any faint adumbration of the doctrine of the Trinity in the fontal orb, the light ever generated, and the heat proceeding from the sun and its beams—threefold and yet one, the sun its light and its heat:—that luminous globe, and the radiance ever flowing from it, are both evident to the eye, but the vital warmth is felt, not seen,

and is only manifested in the life it transfuses through creation. The proof of its real existence is self-demonstrating.

### **1. A Separate Person**

That the Divine Spirit is to be distinguished from the Father and the Son, appears from all those passages in holy Scripture, which reveal to us the simultaneous cooperation of three infinite agents.

Thus when we read, at our Lord's baptism, of the voice of the Father, of the human presence of Jesus, of the visible descent of the Spirit, for:

#### **Luke 3**

<sup>21</sup> The heaven was opened, and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon Him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, You are my beloved Son, in You I am well pleased:

–we are compelled to say, that the descending Spirit is distinct from the baptized Saviour, and from the approving Father. And when Jesus says,

#### **John 14**

<sup>16</sup> I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever:

–and when this promise being fulfilled on the day of Pentecost, we find that the Holy Ghost appeared seated on the disciples as cloven tongues of fire: we are constrained to acknowledge that the Spirit is distinct from the mediating Saviour, and the Father who decreed the gift. And when we read of...

#### **Matthew 28**

<sup>19</sup> ...the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost,

–and again of...

#### **2 Corinthians 13**

<sup>14</sup> ...the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit,

–it is impossible to deny the necessary distinction here affirmed. And when the saints are described as:

### **1 Peter 1**

<sup>2</sup> Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ,

–Scripture leads us to conclude that as the bleeding Saviour is distinct from the predestinating Father, so the sanctifying Spirit is himself distinct.

And when the benediction of grace and peace is implored from:

### **Revelation 1**

<sup>4</sup> ...from Him which is, and which was, and which is to come; and from the seven Spirits which are before the throne;<sup>242</sup>

<sup>5</sup> And from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness,

---

<sup>242</sup> The phrase is emblematical, but not the less definitive and precise when compared with other Scriptures. Indeed, emblems are a kind of universal language for every age and country. After all that has been written on this subject, I feel persuaded that the word is here its own plain interpreter. The principal passages bearing on this are:

(1) “The Spirit of Jehovah shall rest on Him; the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of Jehovah, and shall make Him of quick understanding in the fear of Jehovah.” *Isaiah* 11:2-3. I do not think any stress can be laid on the *number* here, as the Hebrew only enumerates six, repeating the last with a preposition— (though the Septuagint distinguish seven,)— but on the *multiplicity* of perfections designated by various names and comprised in one, the Spirit of Jehovah.

(2) “Upon one stone shall be seven eyes.” “Those seven; they are the eyes of Jehovah, which run to and fro through the whole earth.” *Zechariah* 4:10. The Septuagint translate the seven in the same clause with the eyes.

(3) “And from the seven spirits which are before the throne.” *Revelation* 1:4.

(4) “These things says He that has the seven spirits of God.” *Revelation* 3:1.

(5) “And seven lamps of fire, burning before the throne, which are the seven spirits of God.” *Revelation* 4:5.

(6) “In the midst of the throne and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.” *Revelation* 5:6. No one can fail remarking the designed coincidence between this and the Septuagint version of *Zechariah* 4:10.

Here we learn,

—we are assured that as there is a distinction intended between the eternal Father and the Lord Jesus, so is there likewise between them and the sevenfold Spirit of God.

In this stage of our inquiry it will be enough to ask ourselves, in the cases cited above,

“Was the cooperating Spirit identical with the Father or with the Son?”

Could you say it was the Father or the Son who descended on Christ at His baptism, or on the apostles at Pentecost? Could you assert that we are baptized into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of one who likewise is the Father, or the Son? Or that grace and peace are besought from the eternal Father, and from one who under another name is also the Father, and from Jesus Christ? No one could maintain this for a moment. The Holy Ghost therefore, cannot be identified or confounded either with the eternal Father, or with his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

---

- from (3) and (5) *the distinction* to be observed between God and the seven spirits—for they are said to be before the throne. Therefore you could not identify them with the Father or the Lamb.

- from (2) and (4) and (6) *the mysterious union* between God and them—for they are called the eyes of Jehovah; the spirits whom the Son of Man has—the eyes of the Lamb.

- from (3) again, that they denote a willing intelligence and not an abstract power—for to imagine that John prays to seven abstractions in parity with the Father and the Son for grace and peace is inconceivable.

That they cannot be angels is manifest, for the worshipping of angels is expressly forbidden. *Colossians 2:18*.

Comparing, therefore, the other passages with (1)—remembering how Jesus Christ says that the Scripture “The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me” (*Isaiah 61:1*) was fulfilled in himself (*Luke 4:21*)—and knowing that “in the oriental style the perfection of any quality is expressed by the number seven,” —we may fairly conclude this expression represents to us “this heavenly Agent, the Holy Ghost, in His own original and infinite perfection, in the consummate wisdom of His operations, and in the gracious munificence of His gifts.”

## 2. The Properties of Personality

I proceed then, to consider, that such personal properties and actions are ascribed to the Spirit as prove independent, and intelligent personality.

“But,” it is asked, “do we not read of the Spirit of God being ‘poured out,’ and ‘given in greater or less degree?’ If He were a Person, how could He be thus effused or divided?”

Here we fully admit that the terms “spirit” and “holy spirit,” do *sometimes* denote not the person, but the operations, the gifts, the influences of the Holy Ghost: as, for example, when it is said,

### Numbers 11

<sup>17</sup> I will take of the spirit that is upon you.

But the question is not whether some passages may not be brought forward which denote the operations and influences of the Spirit, and therefore *do not* establish the point; but whether besides these there are not very numerous portions of Scripture which *do* positively and unanswerably establish His personality.

Just as if I were studying a work on horticulture, and because the writer here and there used the term “sun” to denote the influences of the sun, directing me to place certain plants *in the sun*, or that *more or less sun* should be admitted, I were to contend, that the author could not believe there was actually such a globe of light in the heavens, although in many other parts he had spoken in most strict astronomical language of our planetary system. You would justly assure me, that the occasional recurrence of such familiar phrases as “more or less sun, &c.” was no valid argument against his conviction of the sun’s real existence, stated elsewhere in the volume plainly and positively.<sup>243</sup>

Now, we admit, that by “the spirit,” are sometimes intended the gifts and graces of the Spirit. These graces may be poured out—these gifts distributed.

---

<sup>243</sup> The substance of the above paragraph is taken from a valuable sermon of the Rev. J. E. Bates, “On the Holy Spirit.”



## **1 Corinthians 12**

<sup>11</sup> But all these work that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as He will.

### **THE ATTRIBUTES OF THE SPIRIT**

Now if, altogether apart from this investigation, you had been asked to name those qualities which evidence personal existence, you would have been quite content to answer:

“Show me that which has mind, and affection, and will, which can act, and speak, and direct; and that sentient, loving, determining agent, speaker, and ruler, must possess personality, or personality cannot exist.”

But we read in Scripture of—

*The mind of the Spirit.*

### **Romans 8**

<sup>27</sup> He that searches the hearts knows what is the mind (or intention) of the Spirit, because He makes intercession.

*The infinite comprehension of the Spirit.*

### **1 Corinthians 2**

<sup>11</sup> The things of God knows no one, save the Spirit of God.

See next section, where this passage is referred to more at length.

*The foreknowledge of the Spirit.*

### **John 16**

<sup>13</sup> He will show you things to come.

*The power of the Spirit.*

### **Romans 15**

<sup>13</sup> That you may abound in hope through the power of the Holy Ghost.

If the Spirit were a metonymy for the power of God, this would be a most unlikely combination.

*The love of the Spirit.*

**Romans 15**

<sup>30</sup> I beseech you,...for the love of the Spirit:

–a plea exactly corresponding with one He had used shortly before:

**Romans 12**

<sup>1</sup> I beseech you, by the mercies of God.

*The self-determining will of the Spirit.*

**1 Corinthians 12**

<sup>11</sup> Dividing to every man severally as He will.

**THE ACTIONS OF THE SPIRIT**

We find—

*He creates and gives life.*

**Job 33**

<sup>4</sup> The Spirit of God has made me, and the breath of the Almighty has given me life.

And again,

**Psalms 33**

<sup>6</sup> By the word of the Lord were the heavens made, and all the host of them by the breath [Spirit] of His mouth.

*He strives with the ungodly.*

**Genesis 6**

<sup>3</sup> My Spirit shall not always strive with man.

*He convinces of sin, righteousness, and judgment.*

**John 16**

<sup>8</sup> And when He is come, He will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment.

*He new creates the soul.*

**John 3** [also vs. 8]

<sup>6</sup> ...born of the Spirit.

*He commands and forbids.*

**Acts 8**

<sup>29</sup> The Spirit said to Philip, Go near.

**Acts 11**

<sup>12</sup> The Spirit bade me go with them.

**Acts 13**

<sup>2</sup> The Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul.

**Acts 16**

<sup>6</sup> ...being forbidden by the Holy Ghost to preach.

<sup>7</sup> ...the Spirit suffered them not.

*He appoints Ministers in the Church.*

**Acts 20**

<sup>28</sup> ...the flock over which the Holy Ghost has made you overseers.

*He inspired the sacred writers.*

**2 Peter 1**

<sup>21</sup> Holy men spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

*He speaks expressly of events in the latter times.*

**1 Timothy 4**

<sup>1</sup> Now the Spirit speaks expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils.

*He says to the Churches the messages of the Son of Man. Revelation chapter 2 & 3.*

*He performs miracles.*

**Ezekiel 3**

<sup>12</sup> So the Spirit took me up, and I heard behind me a voice.

**Ezekiel 8**

<sup>3</sup> The Spirit lifted me up between the earth and the heaven.

**Acts 2**

<sup>4</sup> The Spirit gave them utterance [at Pentecost].

## **Acts 8**

<sup>39</sup> The Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip.

## **Romans 15**

<sup>19</sup> Mighty signs and wonders [were done] by the power of the Spirit of God.

*He caused the virgin Mary to conceive.*

## **Luke 1**

<sup>35</sup> And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon you, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God.

*He works in all saints, dispensing divers gifts with independent spontaneity of choice. 1 Corinthians 12:4-11.*

*He regenerates and seals His people, for we are saved by His renewing,<sup>244</sup>—and are sealed unto the day of redemption by the Holy Spirit of God.<sup>245</sup>*

*He intercedes for us in prayers, for He helps our infirmities...and makes intercession for us.*

## **Romans 8**

<sup>26</sup> Likewise the Spirit also helps our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself makes intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

*He teaches and comforts and guides us into all truth.*

For Christ promises,

## **John 14**

<sup>26</sup> The Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, He shall teach you all things,

## **John 15**

<sup>26</sup> ...shall testify of me,

---

<sup>244</sup> Titus 3:5.

<sup>245</sup> Ephesians 4:30.

**John 16**

<sup>13</sup> ...shall guide you into all truth,

<sup>14</sup> ...shall glorify me, [and] shall take of mine, and show it unto you.

*He can be vexed and grieved.*

**Isaiah 63**

<sup>10</sup> They returned and vexed His Holy Spirit.

**Ephesians 4**

<sup>30</sup> Grieve not the Holy Spirit of God.

*He is designated by the use of masculine pronouns, though the noun itself, Spirit, is neuter.*

**John 16**

<sup>13</sup> When *He*, the *Spirit* of truth is come, *He* will guide you,

–and so continually in this context, where it might be rendered,

“This person the Spirit.”

Thus likewise:

**Ephesians 1**

<sup>14</sup> That holy Spirit of promise, *who* is the earnest.

*He testifies with personal witnesses.*

**John 15**

<sup>26</sup> He shall testify,...

<sup>27</sup> And you also testify.

**Acts 5**

<sup>32</sup> We are His witnesses of these things, and so is also the Holy Ghost.

*He approves with personal counsellors.*

**Acts 15**

<sup>28</sup> It seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us.

*He invites with personal messengers.*

## **Revelation 22**

<sup>17</sup> The Spirit and the bride say, Come.

*He is personally present in a sense in which Jesus is personally absent.*

## **John 16**

<sup>7</sup> It is expedient for you that I go away, for if I go not away the Comforter will not come unto you.

*He can be personally blasphemed (as Christ may be personally blasphemed) but only upon peril of eternal condemnation.*

## **Matthew 12**

<sup>32</sup> Whosoever speaks a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him, but whosoever speaks against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world neither in the world to come.

*He cries in our hearts,*

## **Galatians 4**

<sup>6</sup> “Abba Father.”

*He repeats the beatitude pronounced on those who sleep in Jesus.*

## **Revelation 14**

<sup>13</sup> Yea, says the Spirit, for they rest from their labors.

Surely from a calm and comprehensive study of this testimony, we must conclude that if these qualities and actions do not prove personality, there are none, however explicit and exact, which can do so.

Unitarians are wont to speak of the Spirit, as an effusion or emanation separate from God, or an influence or power exercised by God. Can you speak of the mind of an effusion?—of an emanation, knowing the depths of him from whom it distils?—of an influence, or power, or aught impersonal, revealing future events; possessing a power, and love, and will of its own; creating, striving, convincing, recreating; enjoying, prohibiting, commissioning; inspiring, speaking expressly, addressing the church; performing mira-

cles, transporting, giving utterance; energizing, regenerating, sealing; interceding, teaching, comforting, guiding; being vexed and grieved; testifying, approving, inviting; being present as a personal Comforter who may be personally blasphemed, crying in us until He teaches us to cry, “Abba Father,” and repeating on earth the heaven-sent benediction on departed saints?

If in some few instances you might thus personify an influence, most of those adduced, taken singly, resist such an interpretation; and taken collectively, would, if thus understood, confuse all the laws of language, and thus derange the first principles of truth.

It is not easy to translate into our own tongue the proof we obtain from a study of the original here. But suppose in a volume of history you met with the following passage:

“The prince having left this province thought good that his majesty’s power should occupy his room: as for this power, he knew the secret counsels of the king; he had an independent will; he strove with the ill-affected, and was grieved and vexed with the obstinacy of some, while others he convinced of their infatuation, and was enabled to train us good citizens; he consoled the well-disposed; he issued commands and restrictions at his own pleasure; he appointed subordinate officers; he spoke expressly of the certain issue of some incipient plots; he accomplished prodigies of benevolence: indeed such was the authority of this power, that whoever wilfully insulted him, was by the king’s command imprisoned for life, while on the other hand, he was accustomed to repeat assurances, which came direct from court, of the favor awarded there to faithful subjects.”

Would you, could you doubt for a moment whether or not this power was a personal intelligent agent? And if a few pages further on in the book, you read,

“And thus his Majesty’s power was extended and his dominion consolidated,”

—would you because of the repetition of the term *power*, or *his Majesty’s power*, confuse the latter abstraction with the former

person—would you gainsay your previous unhesitating conclusion, that the power left in that province was a living person? It is impossible. You would say, honest language, though capable of metaphor, is incapable of such delusive impersonations. So likewise the witness of Scripture, which we have heard, is unequivocal that the Holy Spirit is a living Agent working with consciousness, will, and love.

### **3. The Nature of the Spirit**

Now to this agent Divine attributes are ascribed, and by Him Divine offices are exercised towards us.

*He is eternal.*

#### **Hebrews 9**

<sup>14</sup> Christ through the eternal Spirit offered himself.

This is the same word which is used of the self-existence from everlasting to everlasting of Jehovah.

#### **Romans 16**

<sup>26</sup> But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith.

*He is omnipresent.*

#### **Psalms 139**

<sup>7</sup> Whither shall I go from your Spirit? Or whither shall I flee from your presence?

<sup>8</sup> If I ascend up into heaven You are there.

Having proved His distinct personality, this establishes His omnipresence: which truth is indeed self-evident, from the simultaneous work He is carrying on in ten thousand thousand hearts throughout the universe.

*He is omniscient.*

For He alone with the infinite Son, comprehends the incomprehensible Jehovah.



## **1 Corinthians 2**

<sup>10</sup> God has revealed them to us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searches all things, even the deep things of God.

<sup>11</sup> For what man knows the things of man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so, the things of God knows no one but the Spirit of God.

The word *search*, as used in Scripture, does not necessarily imply that successive acquisition of knowledge which belongs to a finite being, for Jehovah says,

## **Jeremiah 17**

<sup>10</sup> I, the Lord, search the heart.

And that the Spirit here is not a mere quality of Divine nature, as consciousness is of the human mind, appears from the first clause, “God has revealed them to us by His Spirit,” which clearly implies a personal distinction; for it could not be said that a man makes anything known to others by his consciousness.<sup>246</sup>

*He is prescient and unveils futurity.*

## **Luke 2**

<sup>26</sup> It was revealed to him [Simeon] by the Holy Ghost that he should not see death before he had seen the Lord Christ.

## **John 16**

<sup>13</sup> He will show you things to come.

And John was in the Spirit when he was enabled to cast his eye across the chart of providence. *Revelation* 1:10, 4:1-2.

*He is absolutely free and independent.*

## **Psalms 51**

<sup>12</sup> Uphold me with your free Spirit.

## **John 3**

<sup>8</sup> The wind blows where it lists—so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

---

<sup>246</sup> P. Smith, Appendix II.

## **1 Corinthians 12**

<sup>11</sup> Dividing as He wills.

## **2 Corinthians 3**

<sup>17</sup> Where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

*He is infinitely good and holy.*

## **Nehemiah 9**

<sup>20</sup> You gave your good Spirit to instruct them.

## **Psalms 143**

<sup>10</sup> Your Spirit is good.

He is called in the Old Testament emphatically, the Holy Spirit of God.<sup>247</sup> He is repeatedly styled by our Lord, the Holy Spirit.<sup>248</sup> And this is His distinctive designation by the apostles throughout the New Testament. He is likewise called the Spirit of truth, and the Spirit of holiness,<sup>249</sup> as the fountain of verity and goodness.

*He is the Almighty Creator of all things.*

Here it may suffice to quote one passage which may well set the question at rest for ever.

## **Isaiah 40**

<sup>12</sup> Who has measured the waters in the hollow of His hand, and meted out heaven with a span, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance?

<sup>13</sup> Who has directed the Spirit of the Lord, or being His counselor, has taught Him?

<sup>14</sup> With whom took He counsel, and who instructed Him?

No words could express more plainly an intelligent Creator, inferior to none, whose wisdom was His own, whose counsel was underived, whose omnipotence was inherent. What reflex light this casts on the simple declaration of *Genesis*,

---

<sup>247</sup> *Psalm 51:11; Isaiah 63:10-11.*

<sup>248</sup> *Luke 11:13; John 14:26, &c.*

<sup>249</sup> *John 14:17; Romans 1:4.*

## Genesis 1

<sup>2</sup> The Spirit of God moved on the face of the waters.

*In His hands are the issues of life and death.*

## Job 33

<sup>4</sup> The Spirit of God has made me.

## Psalms 104

<sup>30</sup> You send forth your Spirit: they are created.

## Isaiah 40

<sup>7</sup> The grass withers, the flower fades, because the Spirit of the Lord blows upon it; surely the people is grass.

And then, as to the life of God within us, He is *the author and finisher* of it. He begets and quickens the soul, once dead in trespasses and sins.<sup>250</sup> He teaches us to pray.<sup>251</sup> He dwells in us, as in His temple.<sup>252</sup> He produces His own celestial fruits.<sup>253</sup> He sheds abroad the love of God in our hearts.<sup>254</sup> He seals us unto the day of redemption.<sup>255</sup> He works in us, educates us, comforts us, leads us, and bears witness with our spirit that we are the children of God.<sup>256</sup> He carries on the work of sanctification, changes us into the Divine image from glory to glory.<sup>257</sup> And by Him, as the One who quickened Christ our Head,<sup>258</sup> will God quicken our mortal bodies at the last day.<sup>259</sup>

Now I venture to ask, as I asked respecting the testimony of Jesus, who can believe these explicit declarations of the character and work of the Holy Spirit, and not repose their whole confidence in Him—resting on Him with supreme reliance, and loving

---

<sup>250</sup> *John* 3:6.

<sup>251</sup> *Romans* 8:26.

<sup>252</sup> *1 Corinthians* 3:16.

<sup>253</sup> *Galatians* 5:22-23.

<sup>254</sup> *Romans* 5:5.

<sup>255</sup> *Ephesians* 4:30.

<sup>256</sup> *Romans* 8:9-16.

<sup>257</sup> *2 Corinthians* 3:18.

<sup>258</sup> *1 Peter* 3:18.

<sup>259</sup> *Romans* 8:11.

Him with entire devotion? Consider, He is eternal, everywhere present, infinite in wisdom, prescient, absolutely just, and is perfect in goodness and grace and truth!

Consider, further, so close and necessary is our relationship to Him, that He is the Almighty Creator of that world in which we live; that He gives us every breath we draw, and that He suspends that breath when we die. Consider, the whole work of the spiritual life within us, from its earliest germ to its latest development, is His operation. What frail and finite creature, like man, believing this testimony, could, in the presence of such a One, refuse to render Him adoring trust and love? If Scripture forbade these emotions, as due only to Deity, we should be rent in twain.

But does Scripture forbid them? Nay, verily. You cannot find the faintest hint against depending on the Holy Spirit too absolutely. There is no jealousy of His claims. The most humble submission to His education is ever enforced;<sup>260</sup> any violation of reverent regard is deprecated with a plaintive earnestness of expostulation;<sup>261</sup> and wilful blasphemy against Him is fenced with the most awful warning in the whole word of God.<sup>262</sup>

Such is the efficacy of His personal presence, that it is represented as compensating the personal absence of Jesus. Every affectionate and trustful desire is awakened in you; for in the comfort He imparts, as explained by Christ, is comprised the communication of every Divine blessing. The claims of no benefactor can transcend those of Him who gives us life and light, emancipating us from the thralldom of sin, and bringing us into the freedom of love.

Only believe these Scriptures and you must, perforce, trust and love this Divine Spirit supremely. This homage belongs to God alone, whose name is Jealous, who will not give His glory to an-

---

<sup>260</sup> *Ephesians* 4:30.

<sup>261</sup> *1 Thessalonians* 5:19.

<sup>262</sup> *Matthew* 12:31-32.

other. Therefore we conclude and confess that the Holy Ghost is one with God, and is himself God, himself Jehovah.

#### **4. The Spirit is Worshipped**

This is further established by the fact that the Spirit of God is revealed in Scripture as the object of religious worship in parity with the Father and the Son.

The 6<sup>th</sup> chapter of *Isaiah* compared with *John* 12:41, has already proved to us that God manifested himself to the prophet by the express image of His Person, His only-begotten Son. The voice which spoke is distinctly said to be the voice of Jehovah.<sup>263</sup> But the message then sent is again recorded by Paul, and is prefaced with this remarkable introduction:

##### **Acts 28**

<sup>25</sup> Well spoke the Holy Ghost by *Isaiah* the prophet.

The glory of Jehovah of hosts was then revealed by Jesus Christ, and the voice of Jehovah was the utterance of the Holy Ghost. Now we decipher the true significance of the threefold adoration of the veiled seraphim,

##### **Isaiah 6**

<sup>3</sup> Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord of Hosts,

—and dimly apprehend why it was asked,

<sup>8</sup> Who will go for *us*?

The angels of light, therefore, worship the Holy Spirit with the Father and the Son.

I would mention in passing, without laying stress upon it, the impressive, vision of Ezekiel, in the valley of dry bones, in which he is commanded to address the wind,

---

<sup>263</sup> *Isaiah* 6:8.

## Ezekiel 37

<sup>9</sup> Prophecy unto the wind, prophecy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus says the Lord God; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain that they may live.

The wind is evidently typical of the Spirit, for it is said in the interpretation of the vision,

<sup>14</sup> I will put my Spirit in you, and you shall live:

—and to my own mind the proclamation to the wind is typical of prayer to the Spirit for His energizing power in quickening dead souls to the life of God.<sup>264</sup>

The baptismal formulary, however, affords an unambiguous testimony. For,

“Baptism is a solemn act of worship, denoting entire consecration to Him in whose name we are baptized. It is the stipulation of a good conscience toward God. Now the existence of a stipulation implies the presence, or in some way the knowledge and acceptance of, the person to whom the engagement is made. It supposes then, in this case, the presence or cognizance of the Son and the Spirit equally with that of the Father.”<sup>265</sup>

Here again we have, by our Lord’s express command, adoring homage paid to the Holy Ghost in union with the Father and himself, at this sacred profession of every Christian’s faith.

I would also ask you to compare:

O come let us worship and bow down: let us kneel before the Lord our Maker. For He is the Lord our God, and we are the people of His pasture and the sheep of His hand. Today, if you will hear His voice harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness: when	Wherefore, as the Holy Ghost says, Today if you will hear His voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness, when your fathers tempted me. <i>Hebrews 3:9</i> They vexed His Holy Spirit. <i>Isaiah 63:10</i>
--	---

<sup>264</sup> Compare chapter 36 vs. 27, with vs 37.

<sup>265</sup> P. Smith.

<p>your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works. <i>Psalm 95:6-9</i></p>	<p>Your fathers resisted the Holy Ghost. <i>Acts 7:51</i>          [The context in the last two shows it refers to the provocation in the wilderness.]</p>
--	--

We may fairly conclude that the One whom the Psalmist calls upon us to worship is the same One whom he says, the Israelites provoked. This One the parallel passages assure us was eminently the Eternal Spirit. I say eminently, for I do not think these and other like Scriptures warrant us in excluding thoughts of the Father and the Son. While establishing the personal Godhead of the Spirit, we must not forget His essential unity with the Father and the Son. To those who believe this, every simple command, “worship God,” embraces the worship of the Holy Spirit; but in the above it was *eminently* the Spirit. The Spirit was the One of the sacred Trinity most prominently tempted and grieved by the Israelites, and therefore the One most prominently to be suppli- cated.

<p>Pray you, therefore, the Lord of the harvest that He will thrust forth laborers into His harvest. <i>Matthew 9:38</i></p>	<p>The Holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work...So they being sent forth by the Holy Ghost. <i>Acts 13:2-4</i></p>
--	---

Here Christ himself enjoins prayer to Him, who sends forth ministers. That this is one especial office of the Holy Ghost, we learn from the *Acts*; and we have, therefore, Christ’s warrant for praying to the Spirit.

Again, bearing in mind that...

**Romans 5**

<sup>5</sup> The love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost,

–this being his peculiar office, I pray you to ponder the following prayers:

### **1 Thessalonians 3**

<sup>13</sup> The Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another and toward all men, as we do toward you, to the end He may establish your hearts unblamable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

### **2 Thessalonians 3**

<sup>5</sup> The Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Christ.

In both these supplications we have the Father and Christ named besides the One to whom the prayer is addressed; may we not be assured that this One is especially the blessed Spirit of Love?

The book of *Revelation* seals the testimony. For, as we have seen, the bestowal of grace and peace is implored equally from the eternal Father and from the Seven Spirits which are before His throne, and from Jesus Christ.<sup>266</sup> This is direct supplication.

And lastly, we have in the 4<sup>th</sup> and 5<sup>th</sup> chapters a view, couched in symbolic but most expressive language, of the celestial worship. A throne is set in heaven. It is then a question of absorbing interest who is the adorable Being, who there concentrates around himself this homage of saints and angels. So singular and sublime a revelation must needs draw the closest regards of every reverent mind;

### **Deuteronomy 29**

<sup>29</sup> For though the secret things belong to the Lord our God, the things which are revealed belong to us and to our children.

Is then the unity of the One there worshiped so simple a unity as to preclude any plurality subsisting therein? The throne was set in heaven, and One sat on the throne. But is this One alone in infinite solitariness? The Lord enable us to keep our foot as we draw near to His unutterable glory! What says the Scripture? The voice of the Son of Man was only now silent.

---

<sup>266</sup> *Revelation* 1:4-5.



### **Revelation 3**

<sup>21</sup> I overcame, and am set down with my Father in His throne:<sup>267</sup>

–and in strict accordance with this we find,

### **Revelation 5**

<sup>6</sup> Lo I in the midst of the throne<sup>268</sup> ...stood a Lamb as it had been slain:”

–and the universal worship of heaven is addressed equally...

### **Revelation 4**

<sup>9</sup> ...to Him that sat on the throne...

### **Revelation 5**

<sup>13</sup> ...and unto the Lamb for ever.

But is this all? Have we now reached the limit of that revealed? I think not. The question must press on every reflective student, what position do the “Seven Spirits of God” hold amid this tide of celestial adoration? Are they among the worshippers, or are they worshiped?

In the benediction of the 1<sup>st</sup> chapter they mysteriously intervene between the Father and the Son, as one of the Blessed Three who are the fountain of grace and peace. In the 3<sup>rd</sup> chapter the Son of Man describes himself as having the Seven Spirits of God. In the 4<sup>th</sup> chapter they appear as seven lamps of fire burning before the throne. But what when next we read of them?

---

<sup>267</sup> An evident distinction is here drawn between the throne of Christ, which His people were admitted to share, and the throne of the Father, the supreme glories of which the Son alone partakes.

<sup>268</sup> If any object that, in *Revelation* 4:6, it is said, “the living creatures were in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne,” I believe the answer is given in the parallel vision of *Ezekiel* 1:5, 22, 26, where the throne is on the firmament, and the firmament rests on the heads of the living creatures; “so that to one approaching the throne they would seem to be around it, though their bodies were *under* or ‘in the midst’ of it as a support.” *Barnes*. That they did not occupy the throne and receive adoration is plain; for (*Revelation* 5:6) the Lamb appears in the midst of the living creatures, as well as in the midst of the elders; and vs. 8, they, with the elders, fall down before Him.

## Revelation 5

<sup>6</sup> In the midst of the throne, and of the four living creatures, and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain,<sup>269</sup> having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the Seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth.

This implies their closest union with the Lamb; therefore, when He, together with the eternal Father, received that wondrous universal homage, the sevenfold Spirit of God must have received it with Him. How beautiful now appears the harmony with the opening benedictory prayer; and how appropriate now the three-fold cherubic adoration,

## Revelation 4

<sup>8</sup> Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

The vision is symbolic, but it symbolizes truth; and it is most suggestive of the highest adoration being received on the eternal throne by the Father, and by the Son, and by the Holy Ghost.

Divine worship is, therefore, on the authority of Scripture, rendered to the Spirit. I admit that in some of the cases the evidence is rather circumstantial than direct. But this we should have *a priori* expected; for in the economy of redemption it is the office of the Holy Ghost to kindle in us the spirit of grace, and of supplications,<sup>270</sup> to intercede for us and with us; and to enable us, in the spirit of adoption,<sup>271</sup> to pray as Jesus taught His disciples,

---

<sup>269</sup> If one passing mention only had been made of them, as of the seven horns, we might have said these shadowed forth perfect knowledge, as those perfect power: but the repeated and varied way in which they are introduced prevents our resting in this abstract interpretation; and hence the conjunction of the seven horns in this verse seems equivalent to such expressions as "Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit (the same personal Spirit who had descended on Him at His baptism (*Luke* 3:22), and led Him into the wilderness (*Luke* 4:1)) into Galilee:" (*Luke* 4:14) or, "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power." *Acts* 10:38

<sup>270</sup> *Zechariah* 12:10.

<sup>271</sup> *Romans* 8:15, 26-27.

## Matthew 6

<sup>9</sup> Our Father who is in heaven.

### 5. The Spirit is Jehovah and God

Finally, the comparison of Scripture with Scripture demonstrates that the Divine Spirit<sup>272</sup> is Jehovah and God.

And the Lord said, My Spirit shall not always strive with man. <i>Genesis 6:3</i>	The long-suffering of God waited—in the days of Noah. <i>1 Peter 3:20</i>
--	---

It was then the forbearance of God the Spirit with which they before the flood contended.

They vexed His Holy Spirit...Where is He that put His Holy Spirit within him?...that led them through the deep...The Spirit of Jehovah caused him to rest. <i>Isaiah 63:10-14</i>	Jehovah said to Moses, How long will this people provoke me? <i>Numbers 14:11</i> Jehovah alone did lead him. <i>Deuteronomy 32:12</i>
---	---

Compare also the parallel passages (p. 172-173). Here we learn that the One provoked was the Holy Spirit, and was Jehovah. Therefore the Spirit is Jehovah.

The Spirit of the Lord spoke by me; and His word was in my tongue. <i>2 Samuel 23:2</i>	The God of Israel said, and the Rock of Israel spoke to me. <i>2 Samuel 23:3</i>
--	--

Therefore, unless you admit that there were three, or at least two, Divine speakers who inspired David, the Spirit of Jehovah is the God and the Rock of Israel.

Well spoke the Holy Ghost by Isaiah the prophet. <i>Acts 28:25</i> Holy men of God spoke as they were	The Lord God of Israel. . . . spoke by the mouth of His holy prophets, which have been since the world be-
--	--

<sup>272</sup> This appellative is not modern. Thrice, at least, is the Hebrew “Spirit of God” rendered by the LXX (πνεῦμα θεῖον: Spirit Divine): *Exodus 31:3; Job 27:3, and 33:4.*

moved by the Holy Ghost. <i>2 Peter 1:21</i>	gan. <i>Luke 1:68-70</i> All Scripture is given by inspiration of God. <i>2 Timothy 3:16</i>
---	--

The Spirit, therefore, is God, yea, the Lord God of Israel. I append a few other passages, (selected from many,) the conclusion from which is similarly self-evident.

That which is born of the Spirit. <i>John 3:6</i>	That which is born of God. <i>1 John 5:4</i>
Christ wrought by me, through mighty signs and wonders by the power of the Holy Ghost. <i>Romans 15:19</i>	Jehovah,...the Lord of lords...the God of gods,...alone does great wonders. <i>Psalms 136:1-4</i>
The Comforter which is the Holy Ghost. <i>John 14:26</i>	I, even I, am He that comforts you. <i>Isaiah 51:12</i>
Walking...in the comfort of the Holy Ghost. <i>Acts 9:31</i>	The God of all comfort, who com- forts us. <i>2 Corinthians 1:3-4</i>
Why has Satan filled your heart to lie to the Holy Ghost? <i>Acts 5:3</i>	You have not lied unto men, but unto God. <i>Acts 5:4</i>
How is it that you have agreed to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? <i>Acts 5:9</i>	You shall not tempt the Lord your God. <i>Matthew 4:7</i>
Your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost. <i>1 Corinthians 6:19</i> The Spirit of God dwells in you. <i>1 Corinthians 3:16</i>	You are the temple of the living God: as God has said, I will dwell in them. <i>2 Corinthians 6:16</i>

These passages might be greatly multiplied; but from this comparison, observing the way in which the names and offices of God and of the Holy Spirit are interchanged, we conclude that this same Eternal Spirit is Jehovah, the God of Israel, the Lord God, the Lord of Lords, the God of Gods, the living God, the Divine being who quickens and comforts—in one word, He is God.<sup>273</sup> And, accordingly, Paul affirms,

<sup>273</sup> I might here add two remarks:

## 2 Corinthians 3

<sup>17</sup> Now the Lord is that Spirit.

He had just said,

<sup>16</sup> When it [or rather he] shall turn to the Lord,...

—referring to Moses entering the presence of Jehovah,

<sup>16</sup> ...the vail shall be taken away.

At all events, the word *Lord*, as used in vs. 16, designates the Most High; and the apostle continuing without intermission says,

<sup>17</sup> Now the Lord is that Spirit:

—and we have in this plain, unambiguous affirmation a crowning and convincing argument that the Holy Ghost is one with the Father and the Son,—very and Eternal God.

If any object that He is said to be sent by the Father and the Son, and that this mission implies inferiority, we answer that, even among men, the being sent is by no means always a mark of subordination.

The members of a senate consult together relative to some negotiation, in executing which great wisdom, judgment, and experience are required. It is resolved to send one of their number. Is it any mark of inferiority to be selected and sent on such a service? And the mission of the Comforter is spoken of regarding the office He has undertaken in the economy of grace,—the work of sanctifying the elect people of God,—a work which none less

---

(1) The Godhead of Christ being proved, the very fact of the Holy Spirit anointing this infinite Saviour for all the work of redemption proves His own Divine infinitude;—for who but God could empower God?

(2) As in the Old Testament we find Christ as the Angel of God's presence saying, "I am the God of your father,—I will send you" (*Exodus* 3:3, 6, 10); thus claiming supreme authority: and as from thence we may securely infer the Deity of this glorious leader, so in the New Testament, when we find the Spirit said to Peter, "Arise, go, for I have sent you" (*Acts* 10:19-20), thus in His own right, setting aside the ceremonial law, we may safely argue this is a Divine person, who, in the absence of the Son of God, according to His promise, acts in His place and governs His church.

than God can effect, and the glorious accomplishment of which will redound to His praise through the countless ages of eternity.<sup>274</sup>

If, again, any ask why the ambiguity inseparable from the name *Spirit of God*, when compared with the phrase *spirit of a man*—an ambiguity which, unless explained, would have tended to conceal His personality—was permitted? I would suggest that His name is no arbitrary choice; that it is the only one which would reveal to us the distinctive character of this holy Being, as the name the Son could alone describe the Eternal Word: and that the very similarity of designation may be needful to express His fellowship with us, His spiritual indwelling, and the high communion carried on, while...

### **Romans 8**

<sup>16</sup> The Spirit itself bears witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

This similarity testifies to us our union with the Divine Comforter who renews us, as our common humanity testifies our union with the Divine Saviour who redeemed us.

And if once more it is asked why He is not more prominently set forth in Scripture as the object of adoration, besides the answer given above, there seems in this, if I may venture so to express myself, a principle of Divine equipoise in the parts sustained in our salvation, by the co-equal and co-eternal Three.

The love of the Father, loving us so that He gave His Son to redeem and His Spirit to sanctify us, shines preeminent: it bathes the sacred page with light, and commands our homage, and compels our love.

The grace of the Lord Jesus, for us incarnate, for us crucified, for us interceding, absorbs every thought, and attracts every affection: and a large portion of Scripture is taken up with setting

---

<sup>274</sup> Bates.

forth the eternal Godhead of Emmanuel, and requiring us to regard Him with equal love and with equal confidence.

Once more, a third is revealed, the Divine Comforter: the glories of His Person are beyond doubt affirmed, but they are only rarely disclosed in full view; His worship is enjoined, but it is comparatively withdrawn from observation: when, however, we look into the subjective work carried on by Him, there is an amplitude and plenitude of evidence from Holy Writ which entirely compensates any seclusion of His visible majesty. The variety of His Divine operations in us as far exceeds in glory, as the brightness of His presence is concealed. The ministration of the Spirit is as mighty, as His voice is mysteriously still.

But here, even when we would feel our way with the utmost reverence, how soon are we beyond our depth:

**Ezekiel 47**

<sup>5</sup> ...the waters are risen, waters to swim in, a river that cannot be passed over.

Thanks be to God, the necessary truth is clear as the light:—that the Holy Spirit is distinct from the Father and the Son; that such personal properties are assigned to Him as demonstrate intelligent personality; that all Divine attributes, such as self-existence from eternity, omnipresence, infinite wisdom and foreknowledge, absolute freedom and goodness, creative providential and spiritual power—attributes any one of which would prove His Godhead—are assigned to Him; that He is associated in Divine offices with the Father and the Son; that He with them is worshiped and glorified; that He is Jehovah and God:—these things are written, as with a sunbeam, in the Scriptures of truth.

But here I would remind myself and my readers that no evidence, however conclusive, can insure a saving belief in the Divinity of the Holy Ghost. The understanding may be convinced, while the heart may rebel. For the Lord Jesus says to His disciples,

## **John 14**

<sup>16</sup> I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever;

<sup>17</sup> Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees Him not, neither knows Him.

And the apostle Paul, while in conscious integrity he declares,

## **1 Corinthians 2**

<sup>12</sup> We speak the things freely given to us of God,

<sup>13</sup> ...not in the words which man's wisdom teaches, but which the Holy Ghost teaches, comparing spiritual things with spiritual:

—seems to chasten his hopes with the humbling recollection,

<sup>14</sup> The natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God, neither can he know them, for they are spiritually discerned.

And therefore rather, seeing we have a High Priest who is touched with the feeling of our infirmities, let us kneel together at the throne of grace, and plead in prayer His own royal promise,

## **Luke 11**

<sup>13</sup> If you being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him,

## **2 Corinthians 3**

<sup>18</sup> That we all with open face beholding as in a glass, the glory of the Lord, may be changed into the same image from glory to glory, as by the Lord the Spirit.



## 7. Life in the Godhead

**A**ND now I must seek to draw this treatise, which has extended far beyond the limits I designed, to a conclusion. I would therefore state my last proposition in these words:

*That Scripture in the Old and in the New Testament alike,  
assures us that in the trustful knowledge of One God,—  
the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost,—  
is the spiritual life of man now and for ever.*

The Lord grant that we may continue to bring to the study of His word, that humble spirit which prays:

### **Job 34**

<sup>32</sup> That which I see not, teach me!

### **1. God Known by Revelation, Not Reason**

To one who receives with meekness the engrafted word which is able to save our souls,<sup>275</sup> the Scriptures already adduced prove beyond contradiction that as the Father is God, so is Jesus Christ God, and so the Holy Spirit is God. This truth, however, must be combined with another, which is revealed with equal clearness and enforced with equal solemnity:

### **Isaiah 45**

<sup>5</sup> I am Jehovah, and there is none else, there is no God beside me.

The combination of these truths establishes the doctrine of the Holy Trinity, for:

These Three must together subsist in one infinite Divine essence, called Jehovah or God; and as this essence must be indivisible, each of them must possess not a part or portion of it, but the whole fullness or perfection of the essential Godhead forming, in a unity of nature, One Eternal Jehovah, and therefore revealed by a plural noun<sup>276</sup> as the Jehovah Elohim, which compre-

---

<sup>275</sup> James 1:21.

<sup>276</sup> The reader will observe throughout this treatise, that I have given no prominence to the argument derivable from the plural form of Elohim, and to the yet

hends these Three; but with this solemn qualification, that the Jehovah Elohim is in truth but one Jehovah, a Triune God, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.<sup>277</sup>

This supreme mystery must transcend all the powers of human thought; and the question must recur again and again, what says the Scripture? Our imaginations must be counted as the small dust of the balance. Thus, do you conceive that the very names

---

more suggestive language used by God, "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness" (*Genesis* 1:26), and again, "Who will go for us?" *Isaiah* 6:8. But I should be doing injustice to my own convictions if I did not state, that I believed this language was intended to foster when kindled, and to awaken when dormant, the persuasion that there subsisted a mysterious plurality in the essential unity of Jehovah. Thus far, I think the following extracts from Dr. P. Smith's essay abundantly bear me out:

"The most usual appellation of the Deity in the original Scriptures of the Old Testament is *Elohim*, which is constantly translated 'God;' but it is the regular plural of *Eloah*, which also occurs, though much less frequently than in the plural form, and is always translated in the same manner.

"This plural appellative is generally put in agreement with singular verbs, pronouns, and adjectives, as in *Genesis* 1:1, *Elohim created*;—*creavit Dii*;—*les Dieux créa*. This is the ordinary construction through the whole Hebrew Bible.

"But sometimes the apposition is made with verbs, pronouns, and adjectives, in the *plural* number likewise, and sometimes singulars and plurals are put together in the same agreement: as *Genesis* 20:13, 'God (plural) caused me to wander'—*vagari me fecerunt Dii*;—*les Dieux m'ont fait égarer*. *Deuteronomy* 5:26, '...heard the voice of the living God (plural)'—*audivit vocem Deorum Viventium*;—*des Dieux vivans*, &c.

"To these may be added the similar expressions, though without the word *Elohim*:

"*Psalms* 149:2, 'Israel shall rejoice in his Maker (plural)'—*in Creatoribus suis*;—*de ses Créateurs*.

"*Isaiah* 54:5, 'For your Creator (plural) is your husband (plural).'

"*Ecclesiastes* 12:1, 'Remember your Creator (plural).'

"The fact which principally requires our attention, is the constant use of *Elohim*, to designate the one and only God. It is not a little remarkable that, in the sacred books of a people who were separated from all other nations for this express object, that they should bear a public and continual protest against polytheism, the ordinary name and style of the only living and true God should be in a plural form. Did some strange and insuperable necessity lie in the way? Was the language so poor that it could furnish no other term? Or, if so, could not the wisdom of inspiration have suggested a new appellative, and forever abolish the hazardous word? None of these reasons existed. The language was

“the Father, the Son” imply a certain point in duration beyond which the Father inhabited eternity alone? Your conception cannot countervail the assertion of Scripture, that the goings-forth of the Saviour have been from everlasting;<sup>278</sup> or the words of Christ himself, adopting the formula which declares the Divine self-existence from eternity to eternity,

### **Revelation 1**

<sup>17</sup> I am the first and the last.<sup>279</sup>

Again, do you imagine that the name of Him who is alone Jehovah, cannot comprehend a Trinity in Unity? Your imagination is as nothing in contradiction of the words of Christ revealing the one Divine name, as...

### **Matthew 28**

<sup>19</sup> ...the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

---

rich and copious. Besides ‘that glorious and fearful name, Jehovah,’ the appropriated and unique style of the true God, there was the *singular* form ‘Eloah’ of the very word in question.

“‘Hear O Israel, Jehovah, our Elohim, one Jehovah?’ *Deuteronomy* 6:4. This sentence was proclaimed as a kind of oracular *effatum*,—a solemn and authoritative principle to the Israelites. Had it been intended to assert such a unity in the Divine nature, as is absolutely solitary, and exclusive of every modification of plurality, would not the expression of necessity have been this, ‘Hear O Israel, Jehovah, our Elohim, one Eloah?’ But as the words actually stand, they appear to be in the most definite and expressive manner designed to convey the idea, that, *notwithstanding* a real plurality intimated in the form Elohim, Jehovah is still ONE.”

<sup>277</sup> Adapted from Sellon, p. 46-47.

<sup>278</sup> *Micah* 5:2.

<sup>279</sup> The illustration, before adduced, of the sun, its beams of light, and its vital heat, may offer some faint resemblance of this great mystery: for the beams of light are generated by the central orb; and yet the sun could not have existed, so far as we know, for a moment without emitting its radiance, nor the radiance have existed without diffusing its warmth: so that “one is not before another, but only in order and relation to one another.” (Beveridge on Art. 1). But no creature can adequately image forth the Creator, who asks “To whom then will you liken God, or what likeness will you compare unto Him?” *Isaiah* 40:18.

Do you asseverate the impossibility of three subsistences in one eternal essence? Remember, I pray you, the words,

**Job 11**

<sup>7</sup> Can you find out the Almighty unto perfection?

What do we know of the essence of created things? The pure white light seems indissolubly one; an unscientific man would, without hesitation, pronounce it uniform, and would utterly deny any plurality subsisting in its transparent simplicity. The colors of the rainbow seem evidently manifold; and the same man might refuse to credit their unity. Science stoops to analyze light; and we are told that:

The prismatic spectrum consists in reality of three spectra of nearly equal length, each of uniform color, superposed one upon another; and that the colors which the actual spectrum exhibit arise from the mixture of the uniform colors of these three spectra superposed. The colors of these three elementary spectra, according to Sir David Brewster, are red, yellow, and blue. He shows that by a combination of these three, not only all the colors exhibited in the prismatic spectrum may be reproduced, but their combination also produces white light. He contends, therefore, that the white light of the sun consists, not of seven, but of three constituent lights.<sup>280</sup>

The unlearned man then, in his incredulity, would have denied an established fact. The unity of that pure white light was not so simple as he affirmed. More constituents than one subsist in its ethereal essence. But has science now fathomed the mysteries of light? So far from it, we read:

Light is now proved to consist in the waves of a subtile and elastic ether, which pervades all space and serves to communicate every impulse, from one part of the universe to another, with a speed almost inconceivable. . . . In this luminous ether, matter seems to emulate the subtilty of thought. Invisible, and yet the only means by which all things are made visible; impalpa-

---

<sup>280</sup> Lardner's *Museum*, vol. vii. p. 78.

ble, and yet nourishing all material objects into life and beauty; so elastic, that when touched at one point, swift glances of light tremble through the universe; and still so subtle that the celestial bodies traverse its depths freely, and even the most vaporous comet scarcely exhibits a sensible retardation in its course;—there is something in the very nature of this medium which seems to baffle the powers of human science, and to say to the pride of human intellect, “Hitherto shall you come, and no farther; and here shall your proud waves be stayed.” Here, indeed, the most brilliant and profound analysts have continually to guess their way when they would trace out a few of the simplest laws resulting from the existence of such an ether, and unfold their application to the various phenomena of reflected and refracted light. It is a great deep of mystery. Science grows dizzy on its verge when it strives to explore the nature of this subtle, immense, imponderable ocean, which bathes all worlds in light, and itself remains, by its own nature, invisible for ever.<sup>281</sup>

Is such the modest confession of truth after all the triumphs of human wisdom? Is man only wading, with tremulous footstep, into the shallow waters of that unfathomable sea called into existence by the fiat of God, when He said,

### **Genesis 1**

<sup>3</sup> Let there be light, and there was light?

Are we so soon out of our depth in seeking to understand one of His works? How much rather may we expect to be humbled as we meditate, and to be baffled if we think we can comprehend, the glorious Creator himself? Is light a mystery? How much rather He who dwells in the light that no man can approach unto! We know him only as He reveals himself.

This self-revelation involves a yet greater self-concealment. There will be the manifestation of God in the voluntary condescension of His love: and there will be the necessary seclusion within the clouds of His unapproachable glory. When a finite being seeks to understand anything of the Infinite, it must always

---

<sup>281</sup> Birks's *Treasures of Wisdom*, pp. 99-106.

be so. There will be the fragment of truth which the student has made and is making his own, and the illimitable expanse beneath, above, and beyond him. Thus in the field of nature we read,

**Psalm 111**

<sup>2</sup> The works of the Lord are great, sought out of all them that have pleasure therein.

Here is our knowledge. But,

**Ecclesiastes 3**

<sup>11</sup> No man, [says Solomon,] can find out the work that God makes from the beginning to the end.

There is the limit of our knowledge. We are invited to consider His heavens, to trace His footprints, and to regard the operations of His hands. And yet after all,

**Job 26**

<sup>14</sup> Lo! these are parts of His ways; how, faint a whisper is heard of Him! the thunder of His power who can understand?

So, in the majestic course of His patient providence we adoringly acknowledge,

**Revelation 15**

<sup>3</sup> Just and true are your ways, you King of saints:

—and yet we must confess,

**Psalm 77**

<sup>19</sup> Your way is in the sea, and your path in the great waters, and your footsteps are not known.

Humble students are treading an upland path. Their horizon widens every step they take. The angels of light, standing on a higher eminence, see farther than they. Still there must be a boundary line which limits angelic intuition: and whatever lies beyond that line must be a mystery to them, or, if made known to them, made known by revelation. We rebuke the want of modesty in the unlearned peasant, who argues from his ignorance against the declarations of science: surely those blessed spirits would re-

buke us, if we, through preconceived notions of our own, refused to credit the simple revelations of God regarding His own mysterious Being.

He reveals himself by His names, His attributes, and His acts. And, therefore, if combined with assertions that God is one, we find Three revealed in Scripture to whom the same names, attributes, and acts are ascribed, the same so far as a personal distinction allows; if we look vainly for any fourth Divine one, or any intimation of more than three; if we connect with this the intimate and necessary union affirmed to exist between the Father, and the Son, and the Spirit, as when the Lord Jesus says,

**John 10**

<sup>30</sup> I and my Father are one,

—and when Paul says,

**1 Corinthians 2**

<sup>10</sup> The Spirit searches the depths of God;

—if, then, we find that every Christian is baptized into one Name,—the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost—we are led swiftly and irresistibly up to the doctrine (call it by what name you will) of the Trinity in Unity.

**2. The Unity of the Godhead**

Hence, at the risk of apparent repetition, I shall bring together again some few Bible testimonies to the Godhead of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost; combining them in one view; and adding a further declaration from Scripture of our sole dependence on the alone Jehovah; so that you may see at a glance, we are compelled by the Christian verity,

...to acknowledge the glory of the eternal Trinity, and in the power of the Divine Majesty to worship the Unity.<sup>282</sup>

---

<sup>282</sup> Collect for Trinity Sunday.

## 1. UNITY IN ETERNAL NATURE

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are eternal.

### Father

#### **Isaiah 44**

<sup>6</sup> I am the first, and I am the last.

#### **Romans 16**

<sup>26</sup> The everlasting God.

### Son

#### **Revelation 1**

<sup>17</sup> I am the first and the last.

#### **Micah 5**

<sup>2</sup> Whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting.

### Spirit

#### **Hebrews 9**

<sup>14</sup> The eternal Spirit.

*The One Eternal is our trust.*

#### **Deuteronomy 33**

<sup>27</sup> The eternal God is your refuge, and underneath are the everlasting arms.

## 2. UNITY IN CREATION

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost created all things.

### Father

#### **1 Corinthians 8**

<sup>6</sup> One God, the Father, of whom are all things.

#### **Psalms 100**

<sup>3</sup> The Lord...it is He that has made us.

### Son

#### **John 1**

<sup>3</sup> By Him [the Word] were all things made.



## **Colossians 1**

<sup>16</sup> All things were created by Him.

## **Spirit**

### **Isaiah 40**

<sup>13</sup> Who has measured,...who has directed the Spirit of the Lord.

### **Job 33**

<sup>4</sup> The Spirit of God has made me.

*The One Almighty is our trust.*

### **1 Peter 4**

<sup>19</sup> Commit the keeping of your souls to Him as unto a faithful Creator.

## **3. UNITY IN OMNIPRESENCE**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are omnipresent.

## **Father**

### **Jeremiah 23**

<sup>24</sup> Do not I fill heaven and earth, says the Lord?

## **Son**

### **Matthew 28**

<sup>20</sup> Lo, I am with you always.

## **Spirit**

### **Psalms 139**

<sup>7</sup> Whither shall I go from your Spirit?

*The One omnipresent God is our trust.*

### **Acts 17**

<sup>27</sup> He is not far from every one of us:

<sup>28</sup> For in Him we live and move, and have our being.

## **4. UNITY IN OMNISCIENCE**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are incomprehensible and omniscient.

## **Father**

### **Matthew 11**

<sup>27</sup> No one knows the Father save the Son.

### **Acts 15**

<sup>18</sup> Known unto God are all His works, &c.

## **Son**

### **Matthew 11**

<sup>27</sup> No one knows the Son save the Father.

### **John 21**

<sup>17</sup> Lord, You know all things.

## **Spirit**

### **Isaiah 40**

<sup>13</sup> Who being His counsellor has taught Him?

### **1 Corinthians 2**

<sup>10</sup> The Spirit searches all things.

*We worship the One all-seeing God.*

### **Hebrews 4**

<sup>13</sup> All things are naked and opened to the eyes of Him with whom we have to do.

## **5. UNITY IN TRUTH, HOLINESS, AND GOODNESS**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are true, holy, and good.

## **Father**

### **John 7**

<sup>28</sup> He that sent me is true.

### **John 17**

<sup>11</sup> Holy Father.

<sup>25</sup> Righteous Father.

### **Psalm 34**

<sup>8</sup> The Lord is good.

## **Son**

### **John 14**

<sup>6</sup> I am...the truth.

### **Acts 3**

<sup>14</sup> The holy One and the just.

### **John 10**

<sup>11</sup> The good Shepherd.

## **Spirit**

### **1 John 5**

<sup>6</sup> The Spirit is truth.

### **John 14**

<sup>26</sup> The Spirit, the holy one.

### **Psalm 143**

<sup>10</sup> Your Spirit is good.

*We adore the One Lord of infinite goodness.*

### **Revelation 15**

<sup>4</sup> Who shall not fear You and magnify your name, for You only are holy.

## **6. UNITY IN WILL**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost have each a self-regulating will.

## **Father**

### **Ephesians 1**

<sup>11</sup> Him that works all things after the counsel of His own will.

## **Son**

### **Matthew 11**

<sup>27</sup> The Son wills to reveal Him.

### **John 17**

<sup>24</sup> Father I will.

## **Spirit**

### **1 Corinthians 12**

<sup>11</sup> Dividing to every one severally as He wills.

*We rest on the will of Him who alone is Jehovah.*

### **Acts 21**

<sup>14</sup> The will of the Lord be done.

## **7. UNITY IN LIFE**

The, Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are the fountain of life.

### **Father**

#### **Psalm 36**

<sup>9</sup> With You is the fountain of life.

#### **Ephesians 2**

<sup>4</sup> God...

<sup>5</sup> ...has quickened us.

### **Son**

#### **John 1**

<sup>4</sup> In Him [the Word] was life.

#### **John 5**

<sup>21</sup> The Son quickens whom He will.

### **Spirit**

#### **Romans 8**

<sup>10</sup> The Spirit is life.

#### **John 3**

<sup>8</sup> Born of the Spirit.

*We depend on one life-giving God.*

#### **Deuteronomy 30**

<sup>20</sup> Love the Lord your God,...cleave unto Him,...for He is your life.

## **8. UNITY IN STRENGTH, COMFORT, AND SANCTIFICATION**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost strengthen, comfort, and sanctify us.

## **Father**

### **Psalm 138**

<sup>3</sup> You strengthened me with strength in my soul.

### **Isaiah 66**

<sup>13</sup> I will comfort you.

## **Jude**

<sup>1</sup> Sanctified by God the Father.

## **Son**

### **Philippians 4**

<sup>13</sup> I can do all things through Christ which strengthens me.

### **Philippians 2**

<sup>1</sup> If any consolation in Christ.

### **1 Corinthians 1**

<sup>2</sup> Sanctified in Christ Jesus.

## **Spirit**

### **Ephesians 3**

<sup>16</sup> Strengthened with might by His Spirit in the inner man.

### **John 14**

<sup>26</sup> The Comforter, the Holy Ghost.

### **Romans 15**

<sup>16</sup> Being sanctified by the Holy Ghost.

*We trust in One God for spiritual power.*

### **Psalm 18**

<sup>2</sup> My God, my strength, in whom I will trust.

## **9. UNITY IN DIVINE LOVE**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost fill the soul with Divine love.

## **Father**

### **1 John 5**

<sup>1</sup> Every one that loves Him that begat.

## **1 John 2**

<sup>15</sup> If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

## **Son**

### **1 Corinthians 5**

<sup>14</sup> The love of Christ constrains us.

### **1 Corinthians 16**

<sup>22</sup> If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ.

## **Spirit**

### **Romans 15**

<sup>30</sup> I beseech you for the love of the Spirit.

### **Colossians 1**

<sup>8</sup> Your love in the Spirit.

*The love of the One living and true God characterizes the saint.*

### **Deuteronomy 6**

<sup>5</sup> You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart.

## **10. UNITY IN LEGISLATION**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost gave the Divine law.

## **Father**

### **Psalm 19**

<sup>7</sup> The law of the Lord is perfect.

### **Isaiah 40**

<sup>8</sup> The word of our God.

### **Ezekiel 2**

<sup>4</sup> Thus says the Lord God.

## **Son**

### **Galatians 6**

<sup>2</sup> The law of Christ.

### **Colossians 3**

<sup>16</sup> The word of Christ.

## **Revelation 2**

<sup>18</sup> These things says the Son of God.

## **Spirit**

### **Romans 8**

<sup>2</sup> The law of the Spirit of life.

### **2 Peter 1**

<sup>21</sup> Holy men spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

### **Acts 13**

<sup>2</sup> The Holy Ghost said.

*The word of One Legislator is the believer's rule.*

### **James 4**

<sup>12</sup> There is One lawgiver who is able to save.

## **11. UNITY IN INDWELLING**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost dwell in the hearts of believers.

## **Father**

### **2 Corinthians 6**

<sup>16</sup> I will dwell in them.

### **1 Corinthians 14**

<sup>25</sup> God is in you of a truth.

### **1 John 1**

<sup>3</sup> Our fellowship is with the Father.

## **Son**

### **Ephesians 3**

<sup>17</sup> Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith.

### **Colossians 1**

<sup>27</sup> Christ in you, the hope of glory.

### **1 John 1**

<sup>3</sup> Our fellowship...with His Son Jesus Christ.

## **Spirit**

### **John 14**

<sup>17</sup> The Spirit dwells with you and shall be in you.

### **2 Corinthians 13**

<sup>14</sup> The communion of the Holy Ghost.

*The contrite heart receives One Divine guest.*

### **Isaiah 57**

<sup>15</sup> Thus says the high and lofty One who inhabits eternity, I dwell with him that is of a contrite and humble heart.

## **12. UNITY IN NAME**

The Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are, each by himself, the supreme Jehovah and God.

### **Father**

#### **Exodus 20**

<sup>2</sup> I am Jehovah, your God.

#### **Psalms 92**

<sup>8</sup> You, Lord, are most High for evermore.

### **Son**

#### **Isaiah 40** [with Matthew 3:3<sup>283</sup>]

<sup>3</sup> Jehovah our God.

#### **Luke 1** [with Matthew 11:10]

<sup>76</sup> The Highest.

### **Spirit**

#### **Ezekiel 8** [also vs. 3<sup>284</sup>]

<sup>1</sup> Jehovah God.

#### **Luke 1**

<sup>35</sup> The Highest.

*The One supreme Lord God is our God for ever and ever.*

---

<sup>283</sup> See [pages 107-118](#).

<sup>284</sup> See [pages 177-179](#).



## Deuteronomy 6

<sup>4</sup> Jehovah, our Elohim, One Jehovah.

From this brief comparison which might be elaborated at far greater length, (if the reader asks for further proof of any statement, I earnestly entreat him to refer back to the more detailed exposition,) Scripture assures us that the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost have *the same Divine attributes*, concur with a mind, and will, and heart personally independent, but unitedly harmonious in *the same Divine acts*, and are addressed by *the same Divine names*.

And further, we learn that our trust is not dispersed or confused by this co-equal Godhead of the Sacred Three: but that (a way of access being opened in the Gospel through the revelation of the Father in Christ by the Spirit) we rest on, we worship, and we love One God. Thus, these Three are One: or, in the language of the first Article of the Church of England:

There is but One living and true God, everlasting; without body, parts, or passions; of infinite power, wisdom, and goodness; the Maker and Preserver of all things, both visible and invisible. And in Unity of this Godhead, there be Three persons of one substance, power, and eternity; the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost.

### 3. Practical Faith, Not Creedal Perfection

Are you tempted to say,

“Such a brief article as this enunciated by Christ himself, and recorded by the apostles, would have settled every controversy for ever: why, oh why, was it not contained in Scripture?”

Haply, Elihu might quell the rising suspicion,

#### Job 33

<sup>12</sup> Behold in this you are not just: I will answer you, that God is greater than man.

<sup>13</sup> Why do you strive against Him? for He gives not account of any of His matters.

<sup>14</sup> For God speaks once, yea twice, but man perceives it not.

But it is by no means certain that such an article would have settled every doubt. It would have been handed down from age to age: many manuscripts must needs be collated: possibly some obscure variation might be discovered. But even if the text were as impregnable as the opening of John's Gospel, I doubt whether it would have convinced such minds as remain unconvinced of the Godhead of Christ, after weighing those transparent declarations.

Saving faith is the gift of God.<sup>285</sup> Granting, however, that it had materially shortened the path by which sincere inquirers attain the true faith (for Scripture assures us that none, who heartily seek the Lord, stop short of Jesus Christ<sup>286</sup>), what would have been its effect on the church at large? Permit me here to quote some admirable remarks from *Cautions for the Times*.

There is another reason against the providing in Scripture of a regular systematic statement of Christian doctrines. Supposing such a summary of Gospel truths had been drawn up, and could have been contrived with such exquisite skill as to be sufficient and well-adapted for all, of every age and country, what would have been the probable result? It would have commanded the unhesitating assent of all Christians who would, with deep veneration, have stored up the very words of it in their memory, without any need of laboriously searching the rest of the Scriptures, to ascertain its agreement with them; which is what we do (at least, are evidently called on to do) with a human exposition of the faith: and the absence of this labor, together with the tranquil security as to the correctness of their belief, which would have been thus generated, would have ended in a careless and contented apathy. There would have been...no call for vigilant attention in the investigation of truth—none of that effort of mind which is now requisite, in comparing one passage with another, and collecting instruction from the scattered, oblique, and incidental references to various doctrines in the existing Scriptures; and in consequence none of that excitement of the best feelings,

---

<sup>285</sup> *Ephesians* 2:8.

<sup>286</sup> *Matthew* 7:7.

and that improvement of the heart, which are the natural and, doubtless, the designed result of an humble, diligent, and sincere study of the Christian Scriptures.

In fact all study, properly so called, of the rest of Scripture—all lively interest in its perusal—would have nearly been superseded by such an inspired compendium of doctrine; to which alone, as by far the most convenient for that purpose, habitual reference would have been made in any question that might arise. Both would have been regarded indeed as of Divine authority: but the compendium as the fused and purified metal; the other as the mine containing the crude ore. And the compendium itself being not like the existing Scriptures, that *from which* the faith is to be learned but *the very thing to be learned*, would have come to be regarded by most with an indolent, unthinking veneration, which would have exercised little or no influence on the character. Their orthodoxy would have been as it were petrified; like the bodies of those animals we read of incrustated in the ice of the polar regions—firm fixed, indeed, and preserved unchangeable; but cold, motionless, lifeless. It is only when our energies are roused, and our faculties exercised, and our attention kept awake by an ardent pursuit of truth and anxious watchfulness against error—when, in short, we feel ourselves to be doing something towards acquiring, or retaining, or improving our knowledge—it is then only that that knowledge makes the requisite practical impression on the heart and on the conduct.

To the Church then, has her all-wise Founder left the office of *teaching*—to the Scriptures, that of proving the Christian doctrine: to the Scriptures, He has left the delineation of Christian *principles*—to each Church, the *application* of those principles, in their Symbols or Articles of religion—in their forms of worship—and in their Ecclesiastical regulations. pp. 443-444.

I would only add that the exceeding value of such symbols or creeds, *as may be proved by most certain warrants of holy Scripture*, appears from the daily shifting opinions of Unitarian congregations on those articles of faith which it is of the last importance should be settled and stable. This may teach us that articles of faith received, because demonstrable by Scripture, are beyond all

price: while, probably, if themselves incorporated in Holy Writ, seeing how many nominal Christians, professors of an orthodox creed, have too plainly the form without the power of godliness, they would have only stereotyped more hopelessly the apathy of those who have a name to live and are dead.

How beautiful is the analogy here between the word of God and the natural creation. Had we been told that the earth was to be so arranged that eight hundred millions of human beings could live thereon, should we not, in thought, have done away with the vast unproductive forests, the superfluous mountains, the exorbitant ocean, and have divided it into so many plots for agriculture, like the veriest pauper field? This was not God's way. The woods, and hills, and seas minister to the clouds, and the clouds drop fatness on the fertile field and the luxurious plain; and thus He opens His hand and supplies all things living with plenteousness.

So it is with the Scriptures of truth. We should, perhaps, have expected definitions, and articles, and formularies, and canons, and creeds. This was not God's method. There is the incident of touching simplicity, the solemn majesty of law, the flame of patriotic zeal, the heart-experience which speaks to our heart, the grandest poetry, the most magnificent songs of praise, the rapid changes on the prophetic harp, the inimitable story of redeeming love, the calm deductions of logical argument, the echo of angelic joy, the unbarring of the gates of glory, and the reflection of the light of eternity. And yet, amid all these manifold combinations, the simple rule of our faith in the One living and true God—Father, Son, and Spirit, the source of creation, redemption, and sanctification,—is marked out with a precision that he who runs may read.

“But,” do you ask, “is it needful for every believer to pass through such a long process of proof as even this little treatise sets forth?”

Assuredly not. The Bible is eminently the poor man's book. These things are hidden from the wise and prudent, and revealed

unto babes.<sup>287</sup> And to such a childlike mind a very few simple truths generally carry conviction, and with conviction life and peace.

**Isaiah 45** [also Hosea 13:4]

<sup>21</sup> I am God, and beside me there is no Saviour.

**John 1**

<sup>29</sup> Behold the Lamb of God, which takes away the sin of the world.

**John 15** [also John 16:7]

<sup>26</sup> I will send the Comforter to you.

His Father, his Redeemer, his Sanctifier, are equally indispensable to him: and he knows that he was baptized into the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. He needs no more. Without any labored syllogisms, he believes these Three are One. The truth finds him. He does not expect to fathom the mystery: but his whole heart embraces that which satisfies his whole necessity.

If, however, doubts and suspicions assail these first principles when implanted, or keep back an inquirer from believing them, then the word of God, reverently consulted, affords a complete answer to every, what I may call, rational objection. The armory supplies a weapon for every encounter. We are ready to give every man a reason of the hope that is in us.<sup>288</sup> Therefore, if held back by these doubts from faith in Christ, you must give yourself, heart and soul, to this momentous inquiry; you must shake off that deadly indifference which would leave this question undecided; you must watch and pray; and then be assured the promise shall never fail.

**Jeremiah 29**

<sup>11</sup> I know the thoughts that I think towards you, says the Lord, thoughts of peace and not of evil, to give you an expected end.

<sup>12</sup> Then shall you call upon me, and you shall go and pray unto me, and I will hearken unto you.

---

<sup>287</sup> *Matthew* 5:25 and 18:3.

<sup>288</sup> *1 Peter* 3:15.

<sup>13</sup> And you shall seek me, and find me, when you shall search for me with all your heart.

Mortal life, stretching forth into immortality, is to each man like a precious cabinet stored with priceless jewels. But the cabinet is locked, and to those without Christ the key is wanting. The Gospel is that key. It is proffered to all. How many, alas, carelessly thrust it aside! But some, you may think with a modest caution, refuse to make the trial, lest haply they should hamper the lock, until they have been assured by a careful sifting of documents, by a comparing of outlines, of the hidden wards with the key, and by other infallible proofs, that the key in question was the one made and designed for the cabinet. This investigation they pursue with untiring assiduity, until, satisfied of the credibility of the evidence adduced, they try the bolt with a trembling hand; it yields to the touch and the cabinet is their own; they are rich for ever.

Many others, however, have more trustfulness, and less fearfulness. They feel their poverty; they believe the offer is to be relied on; they know that many of their neighbors have found it so; and without further delay they also try the lock. It yields, and the cabinet is theirs. You can never argue them out of their persuasion that the key they hold in their hands is the key of the cabinet. No other unlocks it; and this does. That is enough for them. They may not have so intelligent a knowledge of the way in which that elaborate key turns back one secret spring after another; that knowledge, whenever acquired, belongs to the patient painstaking investigator. But both alike possess the jewels.

So is it with the Gospel of Jesus Christ: it exactly fits the intricate wards of the human heart. It unlocks the inestimable treasures of human life. He that uses it is rich indeed; rich towards God; rich for eternity. Whether he has been led to faith in Christ through long and painful inquiries, as may be the case especially with those who have much time for thought and keen intellectual powers; or whether with a more confiding alacrity, which is the experience of most Christians, for:

## **James 2**

<sup>5</sup> God has chosen the poor of this world rich in faith;

–he has obeyed the Gospel at once, the life-giving efficacy is the same.

## **John 1**

<sup>12</sup> To as many as received Him to them gave He power to become the sons of God.

The question is one of obedience or of disobedience.

## **Romans 16**

<sup>25</sup> The mystery of the Gospel of Jesus Christ...

<sup>26</sup> Is now according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations, for THE OBEDIENCE OF FAITH.

Obedience is life:

## **John 3**

<sup>36</sup> He that believes on the Son has everlasting life...

–and disobedience is death; for the same Scripture continues,

<sup>36</sup> ...he that believes not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.

## **4. Faith in the Godhead is Essential**

Do you say,

“Is not a trustful knowledge of God the Father sufficient?”

Scripture answers there is no true knowledge of God the Father, except in God the Son: for Jesus Christ says,

## **John 14**

<sup>6</sup> I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man comes unto the Father but by me.

And John writes,

## **1 John 2**

<sup>23</sup> Whosoever denies the Son, the same has not the Father.

And again,

## **2 John**

<sup>9</sup> Whosoever transgresses and abides not in the doctrine of Christ, has not God: he that abides in the doctrine of Christ, he has both the Father and the Son.

Now Scripture has proved to us the co-essential Godhead of the Son with the Father: and, if once the Holy Spirit convince you of this, you will be the first to ask,

“What can denial of the Son be, if to deny His Godhead be not this negation?”

With your keen sense of honor, you will be the first to acknowledge that such denial destroys the glory of His Person; tears the crown from His brow; empties the atonement of its virtue; and, however undesignedly, charges the church of Christ with idolatry, and the word of God with equivocation and untruthfulness. For he who denies the Deity of our Lord,

## **1 John 5**

<sup>10</sup> ...believes not the record that God has given of His Son.

There are indeed many, who professedly believing the Divinity of the Son of God, by their works deny Him: theirs, perhaps, is an aggravated guilt: but those who professedly disbelieve His divinity, seeing that such unbelief extracts all saving efficacy from His work, are rejecting the only...

## **Acts 4**

<sup>12</sup> ...name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved.

Farther do you say,

“God is love, and will not visit with eternal condemnation the creatures of His hand?”

My friends, you are making to yourselves a God of your own imagination, a God of mercy and compassion only, but without



holy jealousy and righteousness. Such a one is not the God of creation, or of providence, or of the Bible.

He is not the God of creation, for even there, amid the abounding evidence of His goodness, there are things which tell of His severity; there is not only the sunshine, and the summer, and the dew, and the calm,—but also the terrible darkness, and the wintry blast, and the storm, and the volcano. Such a one is not the God of permissive providence: for there is not only the happy home, and prattling childhood, and the mart of peaceful merchandise, and the honorable senate,—but also the chamber of suffering, and the creeping infirmities of age, and the wail of oppression, and the battle-field strewn with corpses.

Nor is such a one the God of the Bible: God is love indeed—but love embraces all His attributes, not mercy only, but righteousness likewise:

**Song 8** [margin]

<sup>6</sup> For love is strong as death, jealousy is hard as the grave, the coals thereof are coals of fire which has a most vehement flame.

Oh, surely not in vain was the cry of the Gospel herald,

**Matthew 3**

<sup>7</sup> Flee from the wrath to come.

Not in vain the warning of Jesus Christ,

**John 8**

<sup>24</sup> If you believe not that I am *He*, you shall die in your sins.

Not in vain the awakening question of Peter,

**1 Peter 4**

<sup>17</sup> What shall the end be of them that obey not the Gospel of God?

It is so often asserted that the inflexible righteousness manifested under the old dispensation as in the deluge, in the destruction of the cities of the plain, in the plagues on Egypt, or in the chastisements on Israel, has been modified by the “milder genius

of the Gospel”—though they who make the assertion forget that these cases are adduced as examples in the New Testament,<sup>289</sup>—that I bring before you in the note below<sup>290</sup> some portion of the witness of the New Testament to the immutable justice of God.

I fully grant you that now God is withholding his judgments, it is the day of grace, it is the time of love, the goodness of God leads us to repentance: but the season is limited, and when once

---

<sup>289</sup> See *Luke* 17:26-33; *Romans* 9:17; *1 Corinthians* 10:6-11.

<sup>290</sup> *Testimony under the new covenant to the righteous severity of God.*

*Matthew* 3:7-12, John Baptist warns to flee from the wrath to come.

5:26-29, Jesus speaks of the eternal prison, and of the unholy being cast into hell.

7:13, of the broad way leading to destruction; and verse 23, of the hour when He will say, Depart from me.

[These last are taken from the sermon on the mount, in which the Fatherly character of God shines as a golden thread interwoven throughout.]

8:12, the children of the kingdom cast out into outer darkness.

10:15, more tolerable for Sodom in the day of judgment; and verse 28, Fear Him who is able to destroy both body and soul in hell.

[This last in closest connection with filial trust towards God.]

11:20-24, the woes on Chorazin.

12:32, the unpardonable sin.

13:41, 42, 49, 50, the judgment of the wicked.

18:6-9, the end of those who cause offences.

21:44, the stone falling on the disobedient.

22:13, the guest expelled into outer darkness.

23 the woes on the Pharisees.

24 the foretold destruction of Jerusalem, typical of the last judgment.

25:12, the foolish virgins disowned; verse 30, the unprofitable servant cast out; verse 41, the sentence upon those on the left hand—“Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.”

*Mark* 16:16, after the resurrection, the same inflexible law—“He that believes and is baptized shall be saved, but he that believes not shall be damned.”

*Luke* 12:46, the unfaithful servant’s end.

13:28, a scene of future remorse sketched, which the prescient Christ only could sketch.

16:22-23, “the rich man also died and was buried, and in hell he lift up his eyes being in torments.”

17:26-30, the deluge and the destruction of Sodom, types of the end of the wicked at the second Advent.

*John* 3:18, the unbeliever condemned already; and verse 36, the wrath of God abides on him.

the master of the house has risen up and has shut to the door, then the last hour of pardoning mercy will have passed away, and He whose name is love declares,

### **Proverbs 1**

<sup>28</sup> Then shall you call upon me but I will not answer, you shall seek me early but you shall not find me.

---

5:29, the resurrection of damnation.

8:24, you shall die in your sins.

*Acts* 3:23, the disobedient soul destroyed.

5:1-11, the judgment on Ananias and Sapphira.

13:40-41, see the peroration of Paul's sermon at Antioch:

28:25-27, and of his address to the Jews.

*Romans* 1:18, the wrath of God revealed against all ungodliness.

2:4-11, wrath treasured up against the day of wrath;—indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish, rendered to every evil-doer.

6:23, the wages of sin is death.

12:19, vengeance is mine: I will repay, says the Lord.

*1 Corinthians* 3:17, if any man, &c. him shall God destroy.

6:9, the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

16:22, if any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maranatha.

*2 Corinthians* 2:16, to them that perish we are the savour of death unto death.

4:3, the Gospel hid in them that are lost.

*Galatians* 1:8, the solemn anathema on those who pervert the Gospel.

6:8, he that sows to his flesh...reaping corruption.

*Ephesians* 2:3, we were children of wrath.

*Philippians* 3:18-19, I tell you, even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ, whose end is destruction.

*2 Thessalonians* 1:7-9, the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven in flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ; who shall be punished with an everlasting destruction...

2:12, that they all might be damned which believed not the truth, &c.

*Hebrews* 2:3, how shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation?

10:27-31, a certain fearful looking for of judgment and fiery indignation which shall devour the adversaries. It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

12:29, for our God is a consuming fire.

*James* 2:10, whosoever shall keep the whole law and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

But if Jesus wept, when foretelling the judgments on Jerusalem, well may the heart of a poor pardoned sinner bleed, to gather such cumulative proof of His holy indignation. So terrible is the evidence that, like Moses at Sinai,

### **Hebrews 12**

<sup>21</sup> I exceedingly fear and quake.

If it were only one isolated passage, you might urge it was figurative language: but here it is written in history, prophecy, sermon, epistle, vision,—all alike proving that our God is a consuming fire, and that of the enemies of the cross the end is destruction. I repeat, you may conceive a God of compassion only, and fall down and worship Him, but such an one is not the righteous Judge of all the earth: and you may beautify the name of the Father whom you adore with every trait of benevolence, and tenderness, and grace, but it is not the name of the one living and true God, for that is the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

---

*1 Peter* 2:8, [Jesus Christ] a stone of stumbling and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

4:17-18, what shall the end be of them that obey not the Gospel of God? . . . where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

*2 Peter* 2:17, to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.

3:7, the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men.

*1 John* 5:19, the whole world lies in wickedness.

*Jude* 14-15, the Lord comes...to execute judgment.

*Revelation* 6:16, hide us from the face of Him that sits upon the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb.

19:3, her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

19:15, and out of His mouth goes forth a sharp sword, that with it He should smite the nations: and He shall rule them with a rod of iron, and He treads the wine-press of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

20:15, and whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

21:8, but the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. . . .

22:11, he that is unjust let him be unjust still, and he that is filthy let him be filthy still!

God forbid that I should write with anything of bitterness or pride. I feel far too deeply for that. You will not accuse me of it. Shipwrecked in one common fall with us, you have adopted principles of your own, and staked your immortality of weal or woe upon them. We have embarked upon that we *know* to be the only true life-boat: and with all the importunity of affection, those kindlings of common humanity which bind us together, we cry to you,

“Friends, that raft of your own construction cannot survive the tempest. Come with us. Yet there is room. Yet there is time. Our life-boat cannot sink. Our pilot knows the port.”

Let us recur to our position before God, as sketched from Scripture in the opening of this treatise. The Bible represented us as guilty, strengthless, and in darkness. Whatever moral excellencies may adorn us in the sight of man; philanthropy, generosity, tenderness, integrity;—still the penetrating law, the law of perfect love, reveals innumerable violations of our nearest and noblest duties. We are sinners: and as sinners, exposed to all this righteous wrath in the day of wrath.

Once realize this, and our false peace is broken up for ever. Our earthly gayety is gone. Life, without our Father’s smile, is not worth the living. It is to flit through a mazy labyrinth of pain and pleasure, to foster affections which must wither to their roots, and to cherish hopes which must expire one by one. The irrepressible question rises again to our lips,

“What must I do to be saved? Where shall we find a hiding-place?”

### **Proverbs 18**

<sup>10</sup> The name of the Lord is a strong tower, the righteous runs into it and is safe.

What is His name?—the same that Moses heard in the clift of the rock:

### **Exodus 34**

<sup>6</sup> The Lord, The Lord God, merciful and gracious, long-suffering, and abundant in goodness and truth,

<sup>7</sup> Keeping mercy for thousands, forgiving iniquity, transgression, and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's children, unto the third and unto the fourth generation.

How then can He clear us, the guilty? For,

### **Isaiah 64**

<sup>6</sup> We are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away.

May the Lord of His sovereign mercy impress His own reply on my heart and on yours, by the power of the Holy Ghost:

### **Romans 3**

<sup>19</sup> Now we know, that what things soever the law says, it says to them who are under the law; that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world become guilty before God.

<sup>20</sup> Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall be no flesh justified in His sight; for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

<sup>21</sup> But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets;

<sup>22</sup> Even the righteousness of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ, unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

<sup>23</sup> For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

<sup>24</sup> Being justified freely by His grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:

<sup>25</sup> To declare His righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God;

<sup>26</sup> To declare, I say, at this time, His righteousness: that He might be just, and the justifier of him which believes in Jesus.

How blessed, how divine a salvation! Another has offered an atoning sacrifice for our sins; another imparts His righteousness to all who believe. The claims of the law are satisfied; for a Victim

of infinite worth has satisfied them. Emmanuel, God with us, is surety for us.

**Romans 5**

<sup>6</sup> Christ died for the ungodly,

**1 Peter 3**

<sup>18</sup> ...the Just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God.

**Leviticus 17**

<sup>11</sup> It is the blood which makes an atonement for the soul:

**Hebrews 10**

<sup>4</sup> ...not the blood of bulls and of goats,

**1 John 1**

<sup>7</sup> But the blood of Jesus Christ, His Son, cleanses us from all sin.

**2 Corinthians 5**

<sup>19</sup> And now God in Christ reconciles the world unto himself; not imputing their trespasses unto them.

<sup>20</sup> And we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us, we pray you in Christ's stead, be reconciled to God.

<sup>21</sup> For He has made Him who knew no sin to be sin for us, that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him.

O unexampled love!

**1 John 4**

<sup>14</sup> The Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

God the Father loving us with everlasting love: God the Son incarnate, crucified, risen, glorified, interceding: Here,

**Psalm 85**

<sup>10</sup> Mercy and truth have met together, righteousness and peace have kissed each other.

But once more:

**John 6**

<sup>44</sup> Jesus says, No one can come unto me except the Father which has sent me draw him.

And yet again:

**John 14**

<sup>6</sup> No one comes unto the Father but by me.

It is a circle of light and love. We go round about it. How are we to enter it? Jesus answers,

**John 15**

<sup>26</sup> When the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father,...He shall testify of me.

**John 16**

<sup>13</sup> He will guide you into all truth...

<sup>14</sup> ...He shall receive of mine and shall show it unto you.

Here is the power of entrance.

**John 3**

<sup>6</sup> That which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

O blessed new-born soul! washed in the blood of Christ, clothed in His spotless goodness, drawn by His quickening Spirit, it is brought to the footstool of the throne of paternal love. It lives. It loves. All the affections gush forth from...

**John 4**

<sup>14</sup> ...a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

The Trinity in Unity is no longer an abstract doctrine alone, but it interpenetrates our spiritual being. The Father and the Son have come unto us, and in the communion of the Spirit make their abode with us:<sup>291</sup> and thus dwelling in love we dwell in God, for GOD IS LOVE.

## 5. The Work of the Godhead in Our Salvation

God is love. Many, from these words alone, have argued the necessity of a co-eternal and a co-equal plurality in unity, as a deduction from that absolute perfection of the Divine nature which requires every possible excellence: *co-eternal*;—for love implies, at

---

<sup>291</sup> See *John* 14:23.



least, that there be One who loves, and One who being loved reciprocates that love; and, therefore, if the Son were not from everlasting (as the Father himself), the first and the last, the beginning and the ending; then before the creation of our world, or of any worlds, through the receding cycles of a past eternity, they have contended that:

“...the Divine mind would have stood in an immense solitariness,”

—without reciprocity of affection, and without communion of intellectual enjoyment: and *co-equal*;—for love in its perfection requires similarity and indeed equality of nature, (as God records of Adam in Paradise, there was not found a help meet for him,<sup>292</sup>) and, therefore, whatever you take away from either the one who loves or the one who is loved, however you disparage either in comparison of the other, you so far destroy the propriety and completeness of the definition: “*God is Love.*”<sup>293</sup>

---

<sup>292</sup> *Genesis* 2:20.

<sup>293</sup> See Alford’s sermons on Divine Love: and P. Smith’s Testimony, Appendix III: from which some of the clauses in above paragraph are taken. The following beautiful extracts from a German treatise, by Sartorius, have been translated and sent me by a friend.

“That which is asserted in theological compendiums with abstract and often negative precision of the Being and attributes of God, is gathered together in a living, comprehensive, and fertile idea in that great dictum of the apostle, GOD IS LOVE. This saying of the Holy Spirit comes from the depths of the Godhead. It is the Divine axiom beyond which we cannot fathom, and from which all flows; the first principle of our science, as well as the basis of our life. The first article of our creed expresses this: God the Father is equal to God in love.”

[He then contrasts the true opposites *I* and *you*, with the false opposites of some modern philosophy, *I* and *not I*.]

“Love presupposes consciousness—personality: in the true sense we cannot love a thing; only persons can love or truly be loved. In the higher Divine sense, love is the unity or union of two distinct personalities. And this in the highest sense the Triune God is, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit of Love. . . . ‘God is love:’—whatever we may say of God’s spiritual, infinite, eternal Being, of His all-might and all-wisdom; of His holiness, justice, and truth; of His glory and blessedness; is it not all gathered up in the idea of absolute love? How little is said in asserting that God is a Spirit, if His mere negative immateriality and invisibility are meant: or when thinking and willing are as-

But leaving this most profound mystery and taking with you those living truths which are necessary to our salvation, I pray you now to return to the study of the sacred volume. You will look vainly for any formal creed; but what is infinitely more valuable to the earnest student and the docile believer, you will find the threefold and yet united work of the ever blessed God,—Father, Son, and Spirit,—on our behalf. If we ask,

“Whence came I, and to whom do I belong?”

—the Bible answers we are the creatures of God the Father, of whom are all things; of God the Son, by whom all things were made; of God the Spirit, who gave us life: of these Three who are One in essence, and who in unity of counsel determined,

### **Genesis 1**

<sup>26</sup> Let us make man in our image.

If, feeling our low and lost estate, we cry:

“What must I do to be saved?”

Jesus answers,

---

cribed to Him, without any character to determine the quality of this thinking and willing. Love is spirit, is light, and life; is conscious, personal life, not merely subjectively absorbed in itself, but expanding, and manifesting, and objectively communicating itself; filling all with itself, and gathering all unto itself. Infinite and eternal are mere negative abstractions, if they are not contemplated as filled with love, whose nature it is to have no limits, and ‘never to fail.’

“Holiness, what is it but holy love, which only wills the holy and the good, (the Godlike,) and abhors the evil, (ungodly,) because it brings ruin? And righteousness, what is it but the order, the law of love, and its execution? God is love, not only as Creator and Preserver of the world, but in himself, from eternity, eternal love in person, and surely in more than One Person; for love consists in the unity of [at least] two persons. The subject of love is not conceivable without the object, nor personal love without a personal object; without which it would be but self-seeking. The *I* must have a *You*; the eternal *I* an eternal *You*; eternal love an eternal object.”

I give the above fragments for their intrinsic worth, without pledging myself to all the sentiments of an essay which I have not read.

### **John 3**

<sup>7</sup> You must be born again.

<sup>6</sup> That which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

<sup>16</sup> For God so loved the world that He gave His only-begotten Son, that whosoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life.

If now craving that new birth we begin to long for that Spirit with indescribable desire, our Lord assures us,

### **John 14**

<sup>16</sup> I will pray the Father; and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever.

If we ask how this, so great a salvation, was accomplished, the apostle replies,

### **Hebrews 9**

<sup>14</sup> Christ, through the Eternal Spirit, offered himself, without spot, to God; [and thus,] His blood purges our conscience from dead works to serve the living and true God.

If we draw nigh to that great High Priest, crying, Lord, save me or I perish! He answers,

### **Isaiah 61**

<sup>1</sup> The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me, because the Lord has anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek; He has sent me to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound;

<sup>2</sup> To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.

If we turn to the pages of the gospel histories, and humbly ask for some manifestation of this stupendous mystery, we read:

### **Luke 3**

<sup>22</sup> Jesus being baptized and praying, the heaven was opened, and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon Him, and a voice came from heaven which said, You are my beloved Son: in You I am well pleased.

If, as we ponder the threefold benediction pronounced on the worshipping Israelites,

**Numbers 6**

<sup>24</sup> The Lord bless you and keep you:

<sup>25</sup> The Lord make His face shine upon you, and be gracious unto you:

<sup>26</sup> The Lord lift up His countenance upon you, and give you peace:

–and observe how this threefold blessing mysteriously coalesced in one covenant name, for it is added,

<sup>27</sup> They shall put my name upon them, and I will bless them.

If, pondering these things, we cry,

“Bless me, even me also, O my Father!”

–we shall hear a still small voice saying to us,

“The blessings of that name into which you were baptized be yours in deed and in truth, and in the power of spiritual life, *‘the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.’*”

If, emboldened, we would now interpret this more plainly, the doctrine drops as the rain, and distils as the dew,<sup>294</sup> in the benediction of the new covenant:

**2 Corinthians 13**

<sup>14</sup> The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Spirit be with you. Amen.

We betake ourselves to prayer; how easy the new and living way:

**Ephesians 2**

<sup>18</sup> Through Jesus we have access by one Spirit unto the Father.

And while kneeling at the throne of grace how deep the fellowship:

---

<sup>294</sup> Deuteronomy 32:2.

## **Romans 8**

<sup>16</sup> The Spirit bears witness with our spirit that we are the children of God:

<sup>17</sup> And if children then heirs; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ.

Now we see that all things are ours, who are...

## **1 Peter 1**

<sup>2</sup> Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ;

–for what, in the confidence of faith we ask, shall separate us from the love of..

## **2 Thessalonians 2**

<sup>13</sup> ...God, who has from the beginning chosen us to salvation through sanctification of the Spirit and belief of the truth,

<sup>14</sup> ...to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ?

This assurance of faith is no idle self-confidence, for we hear the apostle's earnest entreaty:

## **Jude**

<sup>20</sup> But you, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost,

<sup>21</sup> Keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.

And is now the need of our soul irrepressible for suitable language in which to express the adoring gratitude of our hearts, let us fall low on our faces with the veiled seraphim, and cry,

## **Isaiah 6**

<sup>3</sup> Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God of hosts: the whole earth is full of your glory.

“Glory to You, O Lord most High.”

Yes, the pure white light which fills the firmament of heaven, and imbues the clouds with brightness, and paints the inimitable

beauty of every color which delights us, is only a faint emblem of that glorious name,—the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost,—which alone can penetrate the depths of the human heart; which alone irradiates the mysteries of time and the darkness of the shadow of death; and which has spanned the throne of the Eternal with the emerald rainbow of everlasting peace.

And here I must close. At the beginning of this essay I ventured to allude to past personal conflicts. My faith was sorely tried; and I often thought, as many others have done, that Satan exhausted his quiver on my battered shield. But unutterably painful as those days of struggle were to me, I should number them among the most golden of my life, if they taught me to remove one obstacle from the path of those who are feeling after Jesus, my Saviour and my God. I was at times constrained to cry in bitterness of soul,

**Psalm 42**

<sup>7</sup> All your billows are gone over me,

—though an unseen hand kept me clinging to Him who was my life, like the limpet to the rock, buffeted by every wave of the fretting sea. But gladly shall I have suffered the tempest, if God may enable me thereby to stretch forth a helping hand to those who are sinking in the deep waters, until their feet are planted on the Rock of Ages. Then shall we shortly stand together in His presence, where is fullness of joy, and cast our crowns before Him on whose head are many crowns, and sing the everlasting song,

**Revelation 1**

<sup>5</sup> Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood,

<sup>6</sup> And has made us kings and priests unto God and His Father, to Him be glory and dominion for ever and ever.

The Lord, of His infinite mercy, grant this by the power of the Holy Ghost, for Jesus Christ's sake. Amen and Amen.

